Table of Contents

1. Character Posters
2. Epigraph
3. Prologue
4. Chapter One
5. Chapter Two
6. Chapter Three
7. Chapter Four
8. Chapter Five
9. Teenfic
10. Chapter Six
11. Chapter Seven
12. Back to School Special
13. Back to School Special Part 2
14. Chapter Eight
15. Chapter Nine
16. Chapter Ten
17. Chapter Eleven
18. Chapter Twelve
19. Section two: Beating the Clock
20. Section two Epigraph
21. Chapter Thirteen
22. Chapter Fourteen
23. Chapter Sixteen
24. Chapter Seventeen
25. Chapter Eighteen
26. Chapter Nineteen
27. Chapter Twenty
28. Chapter Twenty-One
29. Chapter Twenty-two
30. Chapter Twenty-three
31. Chapter Twenty-four
32. Chapter Twenty-five
33. Mini Chapter
34. Chapter Twenty-six

35. Chapter Twenty-seven
36. Chapter Twenty- eight
37. Chapter Twenty-nine
38. Mini Chapter Two
39. Chapter Thirty
40. Chapter Thirty-one
41. Chapter Thirty-two
42. Chapter Thirty-three
43. Chapter Thirty-four
44. Chapter Thirty- five
45. Chapter Thirty-six
46. Chapter Thirty-Seven
47. Mini Chapter three
48. Cast update
49. Chapter Thirty-Eight
50. Chapter thirty-Nine
51. Mini Chapter Four
52. Chapter Forty
53. Chapter Forty-one
54. Mini Chapter Five
55. Chapter Forty-two
56. Chapter Forty-three
57. Chapter Forty-four
58. Chapter Forty-five
59. Chapter Forty-six
60. Chapter Forty-Seven
61. Chapter Forty-Eight
62. Chapter Forty-nine
63. Chapter Fifty
64. Chapter Fifty-one
65. Chapter Fifty-two
66. Character Descent: Filler
67. Chapter Fifty-three
68. Chapter Fifty-four
69. Character Descent: Andreana
70. Chapter Fifty-five
71. Andreana's house
72. Chapter Fifty-six
73. Chapter Fifty-seven
74. I'll be back soon

Character Posters

[image]

Ella Fitzherbert Gothel- Westergaard~

Ella Smirked, "This is our world now love and we do what we want, and really we're only stealing one of the four Kingdoms as the others were where we would rule when we got older, But really we don't want to wait anymore." she picked up dragon eye, as Mal reached out for her mothers staff she was halted by the girl who held up a finger, "I told you would your Mothers staff when we're done." she snapped her fingers and the staff shrunk and she stuffed it in her pocket. "Wand" Mal bowed her head and looked at Ben before handing over the wand.

Jay and Ella truly loved each other no matter how messed up and toxic their relationship was. Ella may have to manipulate him at times but his feelings were genuine and so were hers. She didn't know what she would do without him. She didn't want him for any reason rather than still having that little Auradon princess in her at the time who still believed in true love. And she truly loved Jay.

[image]

Jazzy Rahman Faciliar

"You really wanna play this game Princess." Jazzy Hiked up her dress and revealed her Isle outfit on on the belt was a row of small Dolls she held out her hand and the one in a prink dress was dropped into her hand by a shadow, she stabbed a pin into its arm and watched as scratches and scars appeared on the princess. Jazzy's eyes shimmered with insanity, "Don't play with me, I play to win"

Carlos Knew that this was the only outcome were he would be loved and gain the power to get away from his mother, he knew Jazzy was the lesser of Evils as he wouldn't be subjected to

manipulation, seduction, or Bloodlust, and Jazzy was by far the most driven by her emotions if she hated him she would let him know.

[image]

Aaron Tails Hook~

Aaron Smiled hearing the interruption, He looked at Ella and Ryder with a pleading face, Ella nodded her glare fixed in the blond. The Vk's were trying to make faces to get him to shut up but he didn't notice. A dagger grazed his cheek not only cutting a few hairs but drawing some blood, in seconds he was on a ground and Aaron was over him with his sword pointed at the princes Throat, His suit glowed a soft Blue and changed into a nice Pirate coat and a hat appearing on his head, looking ever bit like the boy he was raised to be.

"You are mine, I am your key to power, you can finally be a queen just like you always wanted." he almost sounded sweet. His hand moved from her chin in a hard grip to her cheek caressing it gently, a motion that Evie instinctually leaned into. "Everything I do is for you, love, please don't make me waste my time, remember what I always say."

[image]

Ryder Fitzherbert Gothel- Westergaard

"I'm running this show Ben, This crown." He plucked the golden crown off the restrained kings head, "Doesn't mean anything anymore," He tossed it across the room letting it land with a Clang. He saw Lonnie try and break free of her bonds so he whipped out a hand and let chains incase her and everyone in the room, "This is my kingdom now the four kingdom's will stand tall again but this time under four monarchies. as for your three." he looked at the previous Rulers, "I know just what to do."

"At the end of the day we all know it can't happen, I need a powerful queen by my side, and that's you." He gently lifted Mal's chin, and "I'm willing to let that be you, If you'll accept me."

Mal knew the manipulation was coming: The words that would get her to love him or at least think she loved him, it was the only way the boy knew how to show he cared. She braced herself for promises of power and revenge. What he said shocked her, "Ella would respect you. Your mother would be proud of you, You would be just like if not better than her." and those golden words spoken by a Silver tongue finally cracked Mal

[image]

Mal(eficent) Bertha {Gothel- Westergaard}

"Not saying I want one but why are Ella and Jay the only ones allowed a love story?"

To say Mal hated Ella was wrong, she didn't hate the girl she actually cared for her, she hated her manipulative attitude and how well it worked on her. She hated how Ella didn't see her as a threat; she was merely a constant noise in the back of her head to drown out, Mal was a speed bump on her way to corrupt the crown.

[image]

Evie Queen {Hook}

"I have a prince and so do you. I don't need Chad to be a queen. I already will be one; he is merely a toy for me to play with along the way."

He gripped her shoulders tight and whispered in her ear.

She tried to control her shaking but she was the worst at concealing her feelings and while she could keep her body under her well trained control she wasn't perfect and Aaron could still feel it like an earthquake at his fingertips. "N-no its not like that I swear."

[image]

Carlos De Vil {Faciliar}

"And if they don't?" Carlos asked, holding out his arms for Jazzy who decided to fall back on top of him and lay in the smaller boy's

lap, Basically claiming her control again. She reached up a bit and caressed his check making him look her in the eye, both of their eyes glowing. The boy who was so touch and affection starved was so easily manipulated it was almost sad.

Now Jazzy was the object of affection for the boy who so badly needed love of his own, clinging to the hope for a love story like Ella and Jay. So desperately jealous of Jay's ability to make Ella of all people, the queen, the most villainous one of them all to fall madly in love with him.

[image]

Jay Cobra {Gothel- Westergaard}

"I know as soon as we win It's gonna be us. Right?" he asked sitting up
She nodded, "You and me darlin' you and me forever." she followed up after him
He smiled, touching his head to hers, "that's all I want."
Her hands were on his cheeks and he looked directly at her, "you'll get that and so much more."

The prince of thieves was quite possibly the only one with his mind set on the wand 24/7. If getting that wand meant never ending happiness with Ella, well he wanted it as soon as possible.

Epigraph

Prologue

[image]

~Taken~

"Get away from them!" Eugene screamed, Five guards were holding him down as two more raced into their children's rooms.

Rapunzel is held down, she tries to kick and beat the guards to no avail as they were ready for her before she could even react to what was happening, "Stay away from my babies! Let them go, they didn't do anything!" Her screams are heart shattering.

Nothing could have prepared them for the sound of their five year old shouting and their two year old's cries, "Mama! Daddy!" Ella screamed her golden hair tousled as she was clearly violently ripped from her bed, tears streamed down her cheeks, she banged on the soldier's helmet with her small fist trying to get them to let her go. Ryder was confused, he was snatched out of his crib by a strange man and more of them were here holding his mom and dad. He let out an ear splitting cry and pulled at the guards face. "Daddy help us!" Eugene kept pulling, trying to free himself as they dragged his kids, his little girl and little boy, his whole world away from him.

The couple was only let go when Ella and Ryder were loaded into an armored car and far away from the royal couple. Rapunzel was on the ground staring at her arms where her baby boy laid just a half hour ago, tears fell to the ground but these didn't save a life, these didn't reverse time, this time her tears couldn't fix the problem.

Eugene's hands clenched into fist his head banged on the wall as he helplessly watched the car holding his kids fade into the distance and another, a limo this time pulls up. Out stepped Belle, Adam, and Fairy godmother. The moment they walked in he was on the defensive covering his vulnerable wife who was numb, expressionless as tears continued to stream down her cheeks.

"What the hell is wrong with you people!" He shouted the moment they walked in. "Your guard ambush us while we put our kids to sleep, restrain us and steal them from their beds. They're babies, what could they have possibly done to threaten you! I want my kids back right now!"

Fairy godmother tried to reason with them, "Their part or a prophecy that could free the villains from the isle, when Ella got her powers we thought it was just a coincidence until Ryder, Jazzy and Aaron got them too and we knew we had to send them away."

The former blond stood her face a mixture of several emotions, "wait You did this to Ariel and Eric and Aladain and Jasmine too, and you only took Jazzy and Aaron, what about Melody and Aziz did you just leave them without their siblings. You took both of our kids what the hell is wrong with you." Any preppy princess lessons she had learned flew out the window, "Why would you send them away instead of teaching them."

"We can't take that chance the villains can never be released." Adam 'reasoned.' there was no reasoning with Rapunzel and Eugene; their kids were kidnapped and taken who knows where.

"Why lest their children topple your precious perfect empire. Is this payback because none of us elected you king? Or maybe because our kingdoms are big enough to still need rulers? Is that it 'cause I see no real reason that you take our kids otherwise!" The king screamed.

"You don't understand yet you will thank us in time."

That was it for Rapunzel, she confidently walked up to Belle and slapped her so hard she went tumbling to the ground. A guard held her back again as she tried to pounce on Belle, "I will never thank you!" She struggled. "I made friends with criminals, I married a thief. I saw the best in people and I didn't Judge people based on the pages of some old story book from a hundred years ago filled with a hundred prophecies. That's what being a queen is all about not kidnapping children who threaten a better rule than you."

Adam was not happy with Rapunzel, "careful where you tread

Rapunzel," he snapped, lifting his wife who now had a red handprint on her face and the indent of her three rings. "We can still dethrone you."

"Don't threaten us Adam." Eugene chimed back in, "You stole our children, we have nothing else to lose, the kingdom the castle the money none of it compares to our kids, and don't pull the we can dethrone you nonsense no you can't Corona is so far from Auradon that we need our own rulers we're separate from you."

"In fact from this moment on Corona, the biggest of the four kingdoms will no longer do business with Auradon. As I'm sure Tirulia and Agraba agreed." The look on Adams' sour face was confirmation enough, "You are no longer welcomed guests in our kingdom You are banished."

"Therefore you are trespassing, Get away from my wife, out of my castle, out of my country, and out of our life."

The corona guards who were previously beaten down and ambushed still disheveled pulled the royals and the fairy out of the room, Adam felt it necessary to give one last jab at the hurting couple, "You will never see your kids again."

"You better hope your crown never comes falling off your head cause we will not wrestle the crown away from whoever it rolls to." Eugene shot back deadly seriously, "Oh and I hope Ben gets knocked off the throne for your actions maybe then you'll know a fourth the pain we feel." Adams eyes flared and he let out a beastly growl ready to pounce at Eugene only to be held back and thrown down the steps of the palace.

Rapunzel was still in shock that her friends did this to her, "So this is life after happily ever after huh?" she scoffed, "what a joke." Neither slept properly that night, Rapunzel was found in the morning huddled on the floor of her son's nursery, his blanket that he was wrapped up in clutched in a death grip. Eugene in his daughters room on her bed that was so big it fit the grown man her stuffies surrounding him tear streaks down his cheeks and the sides of his face.

~~~

Adam sat in his office and counted their losses that night, each family's cries rang in his head, "You wretched foulsome coward," jasmine screams rang out. Aladdin was too much of a crying mess to even get a word out he couldn't even stand. He was almost in physical pain as the screams of his three year old daughter ran through his head crying for her daddy to save her as he could only struggle helplessly as they dragged her away. Aziz clung to the back of the guard holding her carelessly, pounding on his helmet with his small fist, biting his shoulder, pulling at his face anything so they would let go of his sister. Only for them to carelessly drop Him to the ground as well. Not only did they kidnap Jazzy, they sprained Aziz's ankle.

"Agraba, The second of the Four kingdoms will no longer rule side by side with Auradon, You are banished from my kingdom as you have lost my trust, respect, love and care for any of you, now leave or you will be arrested for trespassing!" the sultana yelled. He counted himself lucky that she didn't hit him or Belle.

Then Eric and Ariel's shouts rang through him, Ariel's struggling against not only the guards but fairy godmother magic, "Give him back!" The red head shouted. Her own magic coursing through her veins. Eric managed to break free of the guards and tackled Adam.

He relentlessly beat on the king of Auradon while proclaiming Tirulia's separation from Auradon. Adam walked away with a black eye and a bruised jaw. "I hope Ben disappoints you and is happy about it!" he shouted after banishing them.

But that family wasn't finished yet. Melody smacked him with a tourney bat across the legs, "Give me back my little brother." The thirteen year old shouted, raising the bat to hit him again. A guard had to lift Melody.

"Put her down, don't touch her either!" Melody was dropped, lucky she was older so she landed on her feet and ran to her parents but not before hitting Fairy godmother to get her to release her mother.

In this simple mission he lost not only six friends but the three other
~~~

kingdoms that are supposed to rule with him. He tried to explain that this was for the best but none of them seemed to care.

But here was the big problem, Adam's huge flaw, he didn't care, this was the same man who ordered dead villains be revived just so he could imprison them rather than letting them stay dead and burn in hell. Just so he could be the hero. As long as he could convince the people he was in the right he didn't care. He didn't regret a thing.

~~~

Ditching the four kids on the Isle of the lost was quite possibly the worst thing he could have ever done. The worst mistake he would ever make, playing into his own demise. The kids were alone, cold and scared for all of a week before getting taken in by different villains who sense they're power.

Captain Hook, despite already having two daughters and a son, took in Aaron finally giving Harry a brother. This twisted Aaron made him insane, made him angry, and gave him blood lust. Aaron now reveled in the pain he and Harry caused. He enjoyed stealing and hurting Uma may have been the captain but everyone knew he called the shots.

Jazzy was taken in by Dr. Faciliar. She learned magic, forbidden magic, Voodoo magic, Jazzy was ready to tell your future and summon her friends on the other side to take your soul. She learned from Faciliar's mistakes and knew not to promise them anything, not to make a deal unless she could pay for it for sure, and pay it first. She could and would turn any of her enemies into slimy disgusting creatures.

Ryder and Ella were co-parented by Hans and Mother Gothel as they fought over the pair for days and were just too tired to keep on. This made them Manipulative and vain, Ella could swing her hips, pout and caress anyone's cheek and get what she wanted. She played on insecurities and used the lack of parental love on the isle to hurt others.

Ryder was petty and fueled by hate, he liked causing pain and was sadistic. He was sick, He liked hurting the girls who hit on him. He
~~~

would push the smaller kids emotionally and physically and loved chaos.

They were widely feared but weirdly inspiring all the Vk's agreed with their propaganda. "Your parents had their chance and failed they're the reasons you're here. As soon as we get off this island it's our turn we can still win." they had followers, they had an army at their command and no one knew it.

These kids were broken. Auradon broke them, they hated that place and patiently waited for the day they could burn their precious monarchy to the ground and replace it with a new rule. Adam would regret this day and they would make sure of it.

Chapter One

Ella was sitting back on her couch in Gothel's place, swinging her sword back and forth with reckless abandon, she had changed a lot from the Pretty princess she was as a little girl. Her hair was a mix of blond and black steaks messily thrown together by Dizzy, a red leather jacket hugged her curves black ripped up leggings and thick heeled boots kicked up on the table, a fake ruby necklace in a heart shape around her neck, a gift from Jay.

She stood getting ready to make her way to the chip shop to get her friends, The Four AK's had made a name for themselves on the isle people were afraid of them, rightfully so, and they earned their place. They stayed out of turf wars, they were neutral, they had their eyes on a bigger prize. "Mam I'm going out!" she yelled, not waiting for an answer.

She actually heard one though, "Come back soon Flower and bring the others there's news."

She stalked out of the run down house, the only one she could really remember well, into the dark rundown street. She didn't remember Auradon well but she knew it was a million times better than here, having been the oldest of the four when she came she had to take care of Aaron, Jazzy and Ryder. They may have been taken in but that didn't mean they were loved. Especially Aaron and Jazzy who basically had adopted siblings they had to deal with. Ella and Ryder had a sister Ginny but she was never home they weren't even sure where she was most of the time hey were pretty sure she stays with Mad Maddy most of the time.

Ella was basically the leader of the pack and if anyone messed with one of them she sensed it and you were off your feet and on the ground with a dagger pointed at you in seconds.

The chip shop was packed as always, behind the counter was Aaron with Harry and on the other side was Jazzy and Ryder with Gil looking way out of place, Uma was sitting on the counter Ryder

standing between her legs attached to her neck. "Look alive!" she snapped.

The crew all turned to look at her, Jazzy at her side in a second Aaron was hopping over the counter, but Ryder didn't move, "Ey baby brother get off of 'er" Aaron tested, Ryder hated being called baby he hated them acknowledging that he was the youngest of the group. It means he couldn't remember Auradon at all.

Ryder removed himself from Uma's neck, with a groan, "why?"

"Mam and Pa want us home," she told him.

"Fine," he sighed, turning away from the captain, who quickly pulled him back, gave him a quick kiss on the lips and whispered in his ear. He grinned and nodded, walking off to his sister.

"See ya Uma."

"Bye Ella" she sighed, going back to work.

As soon as they were out of ear shot she started on Ryder, "How many times did I tell you not to get attached. We got bigger plans to worry about."

"What leaving because the Beast is never gonna let us out." He saw a poster and ripped it down, crumpling it up and tossing it over the shoulder. "He put us here for a reason," he tugged at the teal blue streak in his hair, matching Uma's. That was the problem: he was totally head over heels in love, that was an issue.

Ella scoffed "Love is weak and ridiculous, You don't need it, and remember you already promised a throne to Mal, there's eight not nine, you can't get distracted with Uma. Go make out with Carlos or something, maybe you'll get your head together." she slapped him upside the head, Ryder's face went red and he stuttered but Ella kept going "Besides we're gonna get off this bleeding island soon I can feel it."

Jazzy spoke up, "I hate to say it El but Ryders right you to hopeful the old man put us here-"

"We're getting off." the blond snapped, "I can feel it and I haven't been wrong yet. Auradon wants the Royal Four, and they're gonna get em."

~~~

Ben had an Idea at first he was just thinking of the VK's. but then as he was going through the Pictures he found something that Baffled him, A girl who looked vaguely familiar. When he read her name memory after memory came flooding back, *Ella Fitzherbert*. Her last name was scratched out with a pen seemingly from Ella herself replaced with Gothel- Westergaard. He was never told why she was on the isle or the others for that matter, he started hastily sifting through the files finding the others, Ryder Fitzherbert, Jazzy Rahman, and Aaron Tails. All their names crossed out and replaced, Ryder Gothel- Westergaard, Jazzy Faciliar, and Aaron Hook, They were mad at Auradon and their parents. He needed answers but he knew his parents would never give them to him so he went to the best place he could think of.

"Melody!" his parents may have been banished but he wasn't, the woman looked up from her place on the beach as she painted on a seashell. The same she did every year, With a name on it *Aaron* in cursive.

She gave a small watery smile at the boy. She may have been edging thirty but she still looks like a small fragile girl. "Hey Ben, what did you need?"

"I have a question," she nodded for him to go on. "So I was looking through The Villain kid files and saw them." He pulled up a picture of the four but zoomed in on Aaron, "His last name was Tails. Do you know anything about that."

Melody gently took the phone from him, tears ran down her cheeks, "that's my baby brother," she cried. "When he was three your parents sent him to the isle along with Jasmine and Aladdin's daughter and Rapunzel and Eugene's kids, it's why the four kingdoms don't work together anymore."

He was mortified, "why did they do that? Why would they?"
~~~

"Because there was some prophecy talking about four kids from Auradon who would drop the barrier and they had magic so they assumed, God forbid change comes. They placed innocent kids who did nothing on the isle, didn't even give them a chance." she tucked her knees into her chest and ran a thumb over the seashell in her hand. "I'm sure Aziz misses his sister and Rapunzel and Eugene were heartbroken. No one has seen them out of the castle since they were taken. They release lanterns for them every year, I paint a shell for Aaron, and Aziz learned to sew and started making patches for things he'd think Jazzy would like."

Ben was in a state of Horror he had to do something.

~~~

"I won't hear of it, they're guilty of unspeakable crimes!"

"What like Ella, Ryder, Jazzy and Aaron!" The king to be shouted back. Belle and Adam froze in horror. "Yeah I know, You took children who had done nothing and locked them away. They didn't even have the chance to live or make mistakes yet, you just assumed!"

Both of his parents avoided his eyes, "Suppose their children are innocent." Adam said, trying to get Ben's attention away from the AK's.

He links arms with Bell and starts to leave, "Don't think I'm forgetting Ella, Ryder, Jazzy, and Aaron are coming. They deserve to know their parents."

"This will cause irreparable harm" Neither turned back; they just kept walking.

~~~

Ella burst through the door of her house, still plotting and scheming, "Mam, Pa we're home!" Ryder shouted.

Hans and Gothel ran in very excited, trailed by Hook and Faciliar. "We have news, sit, sit" Hans said in a giddy voice.

All the kids sat cautiously. It was never good when one of their parents was this happy. "The new king has invited the Royal four to Auradon." Hook Cheered.

Three of the Four were baffled and looked at Ella who just smirked, "I told you I'm never wrong."

"You're finally being useful. We finally have a way off this floating prison. Right my flower" Gothel said, placing a hand under Ella's chin.

But she forgets that Ella knows no love. "Right you are, mother." She smiled wickedly but her companions could tell she was lying.

Chapter Two

The Vk's saw the Royal Four walking up to the limo with a mission of their own forming in their heads, "Hey babe." Jay said flirtatiously, wrapping an arm around Ella.

"Hiya." She laughed, patting his cheek with her ringed fingers. Lightly scratch a nail under his jaw bone. He was completely under her spell. "I assume there's a plan." she whispered to Mal.

The Fairy nodded, "I'll tell you when we get there."

She nodded, "Lets go freaks!" Mal climbed in followed by Evie who jumped back and let the running Carlos into the car before quickly climbing in herself so Cruella couldn't grab him, then Jay and Ella followed by Jazzy and Aaron. Ryder was the last to get in after looking through the crowd and to Uma who almost looked betrayed, he was gonna have to send her a coded letter when he got to Auradon.

The boys dove for the candy well Jay and Carlos did, Ella held her hand up waiting for the two to stop fighting then lowered in letting Aaron Ryder and Jazzy grab some. Ella prided herself on control and she truly had it.

Evie pulled out her compact "You're looking a little washed out. Let me help you out."

"Ew stop." Mal slapped her make-up brush away. "I'm plotting."

"Well it's not very attractive." Evie said biting into a rock candy, "at least when Ella plots her eyes glow gold and she bats her lashes." It was true and that's exactly what she was doing right now. She pulled a leather bound book out of her jacket and started writing.

Carlos; eyes lit up, "Los?" Ryder question

He pointed to the candy in his hand "Oh! These! It's salty like nuts, but it's sweet like I don't know what."

"Let me see" Jay said Intensely, Carlos stuck out his touch Revealing the chewed up food Making Ella curl up her face in disgust, "Ew!" Jay Slapped Carlos back and stole the candy out of his hand.

Mal Pushed the button on a remote she was playing with, lowering the divider, "look!" Evie shouted.

They all looked forward and saw that they were gonna go off the side of the island. "It's a trap!" Carlos yelled. They all huddled together screaming well. Ella didn't scream, she squeezed her eyes really tight. They didn't go over but they saw the golden glow "What just happened?"

"It must be magic." Evie smiled at the prospect.

Mal was asking if the button opened the barrier and Ella Buried herself in Jay's side.

When they got to Auradon prep, Jazzy hissed at the loudness of the band. Ryder gagged and placed on sunglasses. Carlos and Jay came tumbling out of the limo making the band stop abruptly. "Oh! Ah! Ow! Stop! You got everything else! Why do you want whatever this is?" Carlos shouted as they fought over some scarf thing. Ella looked down at her other half completely done.

"Cause you want it!" Jay groaned.

"No! Give it to me! Ow! Let go!"

Jazzy hissed at them, "Guys people."

At the same time Mal said, "Guys we have an audience."

Jay looked up and realized his sisters were right, he gave a short laugh, "Just cleanin' up." He kicked Carlos, "Get up." He mumbled.

Carlos made his way to his feet. "Leave it like you found it! And by that, I mean just leave it." The lady in front of them said.

Jay rolled up the fabric and threw it back in the limo. There was a girl Clinging on to a boy that looked a lot like the posters Mal and Ella regularly defaced, and the one Ryder pulled down earlier. When Jay caught sight of the girl he said, "Hello Foxy the name Jay." She laughed Awkwardly clearly uncomfortable.

Ella tutted and clicked her fingers and Jay was back at her side in an instant. She curled a finger making him lean down to her level, she pulled his ear "You can have your toys once we take over, For now you belong with me." she hissed so no one else could hear. She lightly shoved him away and smiled a bright and cheery Auradon smile, "Sorry about him he's such a flirt."

The lady got in the way again, "Welcome to Auradon prep. I'm fairy godmother, headmistress."

"The fairy godmother? As in, "Bibbidi-bobbidi-boo"?" Ryder asked a single eye twitching behind his sunglasses

"Bibbidi-bobbidi. You know it." Fairy godmother said.

"Yeah, I always wondered what it felt like for Cinderella when you just appeared, out of nowhere, with that sparkly wand and warm smile." Mal jumped in, "And that sparkly wand."

Fairy godmother brushed it off. "That was a long time ago. And as I always say, "don't focus on the past or You'll miss the future."

The princes stepped forward, "It's so good to finally meet you all. I'm Ben."

The pink girl stopped him, "Prince Benjamin soon to be king." She gushed.

Evie stepped forward "You had me at prince. My mom's a queen, which makes me a princess." She curtsied.

"The evil queen has no royal status here and neither do you."

Aarons eyes lit up making the others lurch forward, he was in front of Audrey in a second, "That was rude Princess. Leave her alone." he spat the word Princess like an insult.

Evie placed a hand on his shoulder, "Calm down spitfire." He cooled off and met eyes with the other royals.

"They are not beneath us Aaron nor are they above us." Jazzy said in the same fake.

"I'm sorry but you have no royal status either." Audrey said in a fake voice.

"We may have been cast aside but our status can't be revoked by Auradon. Last we heard our parents, our real parents dropped this place." Ella said menacingly, all Four looked up and Audrey instantly recognized them and gasped stumbling back

There was silence for a minute. "This is Audrey." the prince said awkwardly to fill the silence

"Princess Audrey, his girlfriend," she said, also awkwardly "Right Benny boo."

"Ben and Audrey are going to show you all around, and I'll see you tomorrow. The doors of wisdom are never shut." She broke apart Ben and Audrey's hands which made him smile. "But the library hours are from 8:00 to 11:00. And as you may have heard, I have a little thing about curfews." Then she walked away with the band.

Ben moved to shake Jay's hand but he gave him what Jay thought was a light punch. "It is so, so, so good to finally meet me... meet you all." He shook Ella's whose plastic smile was still in place, "This is a momentous occasion," he shook Evie's hand, "and one that I hope" he shook Aaron Then Jazzy's "will go down in history... Is that chocolate?" he said, licking chocolate off his thumb, from Carlos then Going off to Ryder "As the day our two peoples began to heal." he finally shook Mal's hand, staying there a bit longer.

"Or the day that you showed eight peoples where the bathrooms are." Mal said

"A little bit over the top?" Ben asked

Mal nodded, "A little more than a bit."

"So much for my first impression then."

"Hey! You're Maleficent's daughter, aren't you? Yeah, you know what? I totally do not blame you for your mother trying to kill my parents and stuff. Oh, my mom's Aurora. Sleeping..." trying to break Ben's eyes away from Mal.

"Beauty! Yeah, I've heard the name. You know, and I totally do not blame your grandparents for inviting everyone in the whole world but my mother to their stupid christening." Mal added. The tension was so thick it even made the blood lusty Aaron uncomfortable.

"Water under the Bridge?"

"Totes"

Yea there was no water under the bridge If anything the bridge had washed away. "Okay! So, how about a tour? Yeah?" Ben said, trying to break up the tension, "Auradon prep, originally built over 300 years ago and converted into a high school by my father when he became king." He Clapped his hands and the statue morphed from Adam to the beast. Carlos got so scared he jumped into Jay's arms who looked at him a bit annoyed. "Carlos, It's okay. My father wanted his statue to morph from beast to man to remind us that anything is possible."

"Yeah like sending his own people away." Ella said bitterly

"Does he shed much?" Mal Asked to draw attention away from the sadistic girl.

"Yea Mom wont let him on the couch." Ben said that They weren't sure if he was joking or not.

Jay dropped Carlos, annoyed with him. Carlos tried to clap to turn it back, but it didn't so he ran away.

"So you guys have a lot of magic here in Auradon? Like wands and things like that?" Mal asked.

"way to be inconspicuous" Ella hissed at her.

Ben answered, "Yeah, it exists of course, but It's pretty much retired. Most of us here are just ordinary mortals."

"Who happens to be Kings and Queens?" Ryder fired back.

Ben was gonna answer but was interrupted by Audrey. "That's true our royal blood goes back hundreds of years." She grabbed Ben's arm and Put it around her.

"Yeah, so does ours, you're not impressive." He snapped making her reel back, Ryder would never speak to her like that.

Ben saw their dwarf friend, "Doug. Doug, come down." Doug, still dressed in his marching band Uniform came down the stairs, "This is Doug. He's going to help you with your class schedules and show you the rest of the dorms. I'll see you later, okay?" The last part was mostly pointed at Mal, "And If there is anything you need, feel free to..."

"Ask Doug" Audrey cut in dragging him away.

Doug Introduced himself not even a little put off by the VK's, and the Royal four "Hi, guys. I'm Dopey's son. As in Dopey, Doc, Bashful, Happy, Grumpy, Sleepy, and..." he saw Evie at that point, "Heigh-ho"

"Evie Evil Queen's daughter."

"We already know." Ella said, picking at her nails.

Doug was now nervous, it was either from Evie's close proximity, or Mal's. "Okay. So about your classes, I, uh, put in the requirements already... history of woodsmen and pirates, safety rules for the Internet, and, uh, remedial goodness 101."

"Let me guess new class?" Mal asked rhetorically.

"Come on guys, let's go find our dorms." they started walking up the wrong staircase.

Ella called out, "Other way guys." as Doug nodded then was trying to remember all his uncles.

"Sneezy." Carlos reminded him.

The girls had two separate dorms, Jazzy and Ella walked into one decked out in the lamps, lanterns, flowers, Pink, purple and blue. Both girls rolled their eyes and looked at each other pained.

"Gross."

"Nauseating."

"Ugh! I'm gonna get a headache." Ella groaned. "Jazz." Ella snapped pointing to one side. Both closed one side, "Whew! That is much better."

Just a little treat

~DarkVixen

Chapter Three

Evie, Mal, Jazzy and Ella made their way to Jay and Carlos' dorm where Aaron and Ryder were already lounging in chairs. Carlos was playing a....something, and Jay was stealing like normal him and Ryder arguing over who got the better stuff, and Aaron was half asleep. "Jay, Ry what are you doing?" Ella asked.

"It's called stealing." He answered Jazzy and Ella rolled Their eyes.

Mal continued Ella's train of thought, "Okay what's the point?"

"Well, Mal, Ella, It's like buying whatever we want, except It's free." Ryder said, picking up a computer.

Both girls nodded, "Okay you could do that, or you could leave all of this stuff here and pick it up when we take over the world," Jazzy said

Evie laughed, "You sound just like a Villain" She Smirked

"I am" Jazzy smiled wickedly at Evie.

"You do it your way and I'll do it mine." Jay said tensely hoping Ella didn't rip him one, thankfully she didn't.

Carlos Jumped up, "Die, suckers!" He startled Aaron awake who mumbled something about CJ being a brat. Carlos jumped off this little podium thing, "Jay, come check this thing out. Man, It's awesome." he handed the sensors to Jay.

Jay started playing the game, Ella's Pale Face morphed into one of rage, hate and pain "Guys! Do I have to remind you what we're all here for?" Mal yelled before Ella could.

She got a joke answer from Jay since he didn't see Ella's face, "Fairy Godmother, blah, blah, blah. Magic wand, blah, blah, blah." Three of them laughed.

The half Blond snapped out, "This is your one chance to prove ourselves to our parents. To prove that you are evil and vicious and ruthless and cruel. Yeah?" She yelled.

"yeah" they all nodded in agreement.

"And this is our one chance to get back at our parents, the ones who left us for dead, and start our regime, yeah!?"

"Yeah!" Jazzy Aaron and Ryder yelled out more excitedly.

Mal nodded satisfied. "Right Evie mirror."

Evie placed the Mirror in front of her and Mal. "Mirror, mirror on the... in my hand, where is fairy godmother's wand... stand?"

"There it is." Mal pointed out.

"Zoom out." Carlos added.

Evie brought the Mirror in Close, "Magic mirror not so close." It zoomed out showing the whole planet. The mirror was about as off the rails as The Evil Queen herself. "Closer. Closer. Closer."

"Can I go back to my game? I'm on level Three."

Aarons arm shot out hitting Carlos hard against the chest, "Stop, It's in a museum."

"Do we know where that is?" Mal asked.

Carlos typed something really fast on the computer, "2.3 miles from here."

Ryder gave him one of her twisted smiles. "Good going pup." Carlos gave him a smile. They were really close, "Come one." He grabbed Carlos' Coat and threw it to him.

~~~

"Come on Check your mirror." Mal Told Evie."

"Is my mascara smudged?" She asked.
~~~

Ella rolled her eyes, "Yeah. And, hey, while you're at it, why don't you see If you can find us the wand?"

"Sure, This way."

When they got to the door the first thing the saw was a spinning wheel. Jay and Carlos laughed, "That's your mothers spinning wheel?"

"Yeah Kinda dorky."

Mal was offended, "It's magic. It doesn't have to look scary. "Magic spindle, do not linger. Make my victim prick a finger."

"Impressive." Jay muttered. Ella slapped him upside the head.

"I got chills." Carlos mocked.

Aaron pointed out a darker spell in the book, a more powerful one. She sneered and her eyes glowed green making the two boys glow and lurch forward painfully. "You know what, "Prick the finger, prick it deep. Send my enemy off to sleep."" With the darker spell and a little help from Aaron the man pricked his finger and fell asleep. "Not so dorky now, huh? " She went to open the door but it was locked.

"Stand back." Jay said.

Mal quickly turned to an opening Spell, She glanced at Ella who nodded, amused, "Make it easy make it quick open up without a kick."

Jay ran at the door in a flying kick but fell when it was open. Mal and Jazzy laughed, Ella just smirked. Mal Kicked him and asked, "Coming?"

They split up to look for the wand, four ran up and ended up in the gallery of Villains. The other four ended up in the gallery of heroes. They saw four statues of their parents, "Brother?" Jazzy whispered looking at the image of her parents and Aziz.

"Whoa" Aaron said looking at his mom and dad, who had him being

held by melody.

Ryder's breath caught in his throat looking at the image of Rapunzel and Eugene dancing with Ella in his hands and Ryder in Rapunzel's.

Ella was the only one not entrapped; she didn't not glance at her parents; she caught sight of Belle and Adam, she growled almost like an animal. "Ella? Is this really okay?" Ryder asked his big sister.

She whipped around hair flipping, "what do you think they actually cared? She asked, walking over to him, and looking at the statue. "They deserve this, If they loved us they would have fought."

Ella
♫Trust in me~♫
♫Trust in me~♫
♫Close your eyes trust in me♫

She stroked her little brothers hair bringing him into her chest

Jazzy
♫Their in our world now not theirs♫

She marched up to the statues of Belle Adam and Ben with a glare

♫And we've got friends {she whipped around to them with a wink} of the other side♫

Her voodoo dolls jumped to life

Aaron
♫We'll find light in the gruesome and grim♫

"But is this okay this seems like they loved us" Ryder whined.

Ella she sneered

♫We were exiled persecuted♫
♫Left alone with no defense♫

♫When I think of what that brute♫
♫did I get a little tense♫

♫But I dream a dream so pretty♫
♫that I don't feel so depressed♫

The light fluctuate around her

(Jazzy: Put your mind at ease)

Aaron
♫I Admit that in the past we've been well nasty
And they weren't kidding when they called me well a bi-♫

Jazzy grabbed his lips and slapped his face away

♫You'll find that nowadays we've mended all our ways♫
♫delighted, seen the dark and made a switch.♫

(Ella: well give em a hitch!) water pulled from the air wrapping around his blade

♫True yes~♫
♫And we fortunately know a bit of magic♫
♫It's a talent that we alway have possessed♫

(Jazzy: A little Voodoo and Hoodoo) her dolls dance around

♫And we'll used it on behalf of the♫
♫miserable lonely and oppressed,♫
♫Pathetic Poor unfortunate souls~♫
♫In Chains Just plead♫

(Ella mocks: Their AK's They'll help us)

♫Ha! They believed!♫

Ryder Smirks finally shadows covering his face and creating an aura around him

♫Believe me I know we've sunk pretty low♫
♫but whatever we're done you deserve♫

He bend down to the image of Ben

♫Where the bad guys thats fine♫
♫It's no fault of our and some justice ♫
♫at last will be served♫
♫now it's time to step up or its time to back down
♫And there's only one answer for us♫

He kicked the statue

♫And we'll stand up and fight cause♫
♫we know that were right♫

Ella
♫Clapped out distracted Regime♫
♫Failings undoubtedly present♫
♫The need for a different dream♫
♫Yes thee old then times are changin'♫
♫Which means the villains must too♫
♫My vision clear and wide ranging♫
♫And even encompasses you~♫

She clutched Aarons face with her nails and turn him toward her

♫So prepare for the coup of the century♫
♫Be prepared for the murkiest scam♫
♫Meticulous planning♫
♫Tenacity spanning♫
♫A Decade of denial♫
♫Is simply why we became undisputed♫
♫Respected, saluted♫

♫And feared seen for the wonders that we are♫
♫Yes, our claws and ambitions are bared♫
♫Be prepared~♫

Aaron

♫Trouble is i know its petty but I hate to let them live♫

♫Though the darkness and the shadows it's a nightmare♫
♫But it's one exciting ride~♫
♫Hear us roar, we have grown♫

♫Throw you off your silly throne♫
♫You'll be dead♫
♫Good and Dead (Ryder: The battle may be Bloody)♫
♫Kill the beast (Ella: But that kind of works for me)♫

Ryder

♫Not far from the ones who abandoned us♫
♫chasing the love of these mortals {he kicked and broke part of beast statue}♫
♫You made us Unwanted♫

♫(Aaron: Make them hear us!)(Ella:Shush idiot)♫

Jazzy

♫I hope your satisfied♫
♫You can thank your friends-♫

Ella, Ryder, and Aaron

♫You got what you wanted♫
♫But lost what ya had♫

Jazzy

♫On the other side♫

Her dolls flopped down and jumped onto her Belt again

Jay found them, "Guy come on we found the wand" They ran off with him.

Jay ducked under to grab the wand, "Jay Dont." Ella warned. He just smirked and continued. He touched the force field and was thrown back then a siren went off."

"A force field and a siren?" Carlos whined.

"That's just a little excessive," Jay added.

The eight ran out, "Hey pup you're good with computers and stuff

work out how to turn it off." Jazzy told Carlos He nodded and got to work turning off the siren and answering the phone. Then he made his way to Ryder who ruffled his hair.

As soon as they got back to the school, Ella grabbed Jay, "What you did was extremely dangerous and stupid don't think you off the hook I believe a penalty is in order."

Jazzy turned to Carlos, "I'm sleeping in your dorm tonight." He nodded in complete understanding.

Ella grabbed Jay roughly and pulled him toward her dorm for a long night.

Chapter Four

The eight VK's sat in Remedial Goodness 101, a new mandatory class for them. The only ones who seemed to understand anything were Mal and Ella who both were not paying attention and drawing. Mal was drawing Fairy godmother's wand and Ella was drawing a crown her crown the one she would have once she ruled this backwards kingdom. "If someone hands you a crying baby, do you, A, curse it? B, lock it in a tower? C, give it a bottle? Or D, carve out its heart? Evie."

Evie was playing dumb, "What was the second one?" Evie had been playing dumb for her mother for so long she forgot that she was actually smart.

"Oh, okay. Anyone else? Mal?" Fairy godmother tried.

Mal looked up from her drawing, "C give it a bottle,"

Fairy godmother smiled, "Correct, again."

"You two are on fire." Carlos complemented his sisters.'

Ella answered not looking up, "Just pick the one that doesn't sound like any fun." She said in a duh tone. The others all made sounds of understanding.

A scared girl walked in, squeaking as she ran past them. "Oh. Hello, dear one." Fairy godmother said. An idea formed in Ryders head and he looked at his sister who seemed to have the same idea

"Hi. You need to sign off on early dismissal for the coronation." She told her mother looking back cautiously at the VK's.

"Everyone here remembers my daughter, Jane?" She said signing the form.

Jane Squeaked, "Mom!" Making Jazzy chuckle darkly.

"It's okay. Jane, this is everyone." She introduced most of them were uninterested but the way Ella and Ryder eyed her made Jane nervous.

"Hi. That's okay, don't mind me. As you were."

As she made her way to run out Ella stopped her, "It was nice meeting you, maybe we could talk later. Sorry if I scared you. I Just can't help but think I knew you when we were young, Before I was sent away" Ella forced her voice to sound less commanding and more sweet and she forced a smile that didn't make her look like a crazy betrayed princess hell bent on revenge.

Jane, who didn't think she had many friends, smiled softly at the girls. Her voice was so calming. She nodded and took her leave feeling calmer than before, but wondering where she had met this girl. "That was very nice of you Ella." It took all of her willpower not to cringe as she went back to her drawing. "Ahem. Let's continue. You find a vial of poison. Do you, A, put it in the king's wine? B, paint it on an apple? Or C, turn it over to the proper authorities?"

Six hands shot up and Carlos' Hand was held down by Jay, but Ryder seemed to be trying to push his down Fairy godmother seemingly blind to that chose Jay, "C, turn it over to the proper authorities" he said smugly. Ella lent out a small giggle at Jay's eagerness. She didn't know how to love properly but she was sure how she treated Jay was how you treat someone you love at least that's what Gothel told her.

"I was gonna say that." Carlos whined.

"But I said it first. Come here!" Jay wrestled him onto the table. Giving him a nuggie. Aaron swiftly pushed Jay off the table smiling calmly as he yelped on the way down bringing Carlos with him. Ryder wanted nothing to do with any of this

Fairy godmother called their attention, "Boys! I am gonna encourage you to use that energy on the tourney field."

Carlos retaliated with, "Oh, no. That's okay. Whatever that is,

We'll... We'll pass."

Jazzy smirked, "No idea what Tourney is but I'm almost positive that she's not asking."

"That would be the most positive you've ever been." Jay muttered, making her Eyed flash in warning almost like she was possessed.

"Can I be excused? I had nothing to do with this and I am not in the mood to be toyed with."

~~~

Chad and Audrey were laughing while they were walking with Ben who was not paying them any mind. Chad turned his gaze to the four girls. He tapped Ben, "Those kids are trouble."

The two looked over as Evie and Jazzy said goodbye to Mal and Ella who never seemed to be apart for long, "Come on Chad give them a chance." Ben said.

Audrey gave an awkward smile, and held Ben's hands, "Oh. No offense, Bennybear, but you're just too trusting. Look, I know your mom fell in love with a big nasty beast who turned out to be a prince. But with my mom, the evil fairy was just the evil fairy. That girl's mother." She was still unsure about Jazzy and Ella but decided to put them down anyway. "And As much as I would love to Save Ella and Jazzy, they've been around Evil too long, they're corrupted."

"Well I think you're wrong about them." Ben closed his locker "I'll see you later." He made his way over to the girls. "Hey," Ben said. Ella closed her locker showing off the Long Live Evil silhouette with her Adopted mother. "How was your first day?"

"Super." Mal said sarcastically, also proudly displaying a Long Live Evil silhouette.

"You two should really think about taking this talent off the locker and into art class. I could, uh, sign you up. What do you think?" Ben offered to keep his eyes solely trained on Mal. Ella glared seemingly understanding what was happening.
~~~

Jane Passed them smiling at Ella but ducking for cover around Mal, "Way to take all the fun out of it." Mal said, slamming her locker.

"Huh?" Ben was left really confused as the two girls walked away.

~~~

"Hi! It's Jane, right? Ah, I always loved that name. Jane." Mal said, walking in with Ella in tow. Jane was somewhat comfortable with Ella but not so much with Mal.

Jane's eyes grew wide, "That's cool." and she tried to run away.

Ella grabbed her wrist, "Don't go."

She froze a little even if she was comfortable with Ella, she was now touching her. "I guess I was just kind of hoping to make a friend." Mal cut in, Ella let go. "You probably have all the friends you need though, huh?"

Jane responded with, "Hardly" she was still stiff and timid.

"Really? I mean, with your mom being a fairy godmother and headmistress? I mean, not to mention your own, um... personality." Ella rolled her eyes. Was it really that hard for Mal to say she was pretty to gain her trust? She does it with Evie all the time.

"I'd rather be pretty. You've both got great hair." Mal was playing with the ends of her purple hair and Ella ran a hand through her hair.

Mal had an idea spread on her face, "You know what? I have just the thing for that. That's right... Ah, here. Ella a little help." She nodded.

"Beware, forswear, replace the old with brand new hair." They said together, waving their fingers and hands.

Jane looked in the mirror in awe as her hair had grown longer and, Courtesy of Ella had light blue ends that looked like Hades fire. "Wow! You almost don't notice your... Other features anymore." Mal added, Ella thought that maybe she was wrong, maybe Mal knew
~~~

what she was doing without her for once. That was not good, Mal needed to be controlled, She needed a meeting with the other royal four.

Janes turned and tapped the book. "Do my nose."

"Oh, I can't. we've been practicing, but you know, we can't do really big magic, even with both of us. Not like your mom with her wand. I mean, one swoosh from that thing and you could probably have whatever features you wanted."

"She doesn't use the wand anymore. She believes the real magic is in the books. And not the spell books, regular books with history and stuff. "

Ella pretended to feel sorry, "What a shame." she was generally confused, why would these people give up magic it was part of them it was who they were. Ella loved having her power back. It made her feel amazing she had so much of it pent up after it had been snuffed at five she could almost drown in it.

"You know, she used magic on Cinderella, who wasn't even her real daughter. Doesn't she love you?" Mal said, snapping the blond girl back to reality.

"Well, of course she does. It's... It's just, you know, tough love. "Work on the inside, not the outside." You know, that sort of thing."

Ella gave her a look like are you serious?" Then upon seeing her face she said calmly, "That face."

Mal caught on, "Yeah, and then just look as If your... your heart is about to break. "Oh, mother, I just don't understand why you can't make me beautiful, too."

"You think that would work?"

"Yeah. That's what old Cindy did, right? And your mother Bibbidi-bobbidi-booed the living daylights out of her. And, hey, If your mom does decide to, you know, break out the old wand, invite us."

She smiled at the two, "If I can convince mom, you're so there."

"Yay" Mal forced. They all bid goodbye, Mal and Ella smiling. Ellas way more tense then Mal's.

They left the bathroom and Mal Bid goodbye, Ryder came out of the shadows behind a locker where he was waiting for her, "Remind her who's boss" Ella said sinisterly, "remind her who her ticket to Power is, Put her in her place, or on the other hand treat her like I treat Jay." a cruel smile snaked its way up, "Love her."

Ryder nodded once, no emotion on his face, "As you wish sister dear." He walked off noting that Mal had to be tamed, he might not like it but she was his partner in this endeavor he promised her when they were young. Uma was not to be his queen it had to be Mal, They were stronger that way and only that way.

Since the last Chapter was 60% Song Enjoy
~DarkVixen

Chapter Five

The guys never did get out of going to try outs. Not even Ryder who kicked and screamed, thrashed and insisted that nothing was his fault. Another form of cruel and unfair treatment that Fairy godmother does.

"Jay, Ben, Aaron offense. Chad, Ryder, your defense. Taylor, you're the shooter. " Coach looked up and saw Carlos looking around confused. "Hey. Hey! Hey, you. Lost boy! Put your helmet on. Get out of the kill zone! Come on."

Ryder ran over to Carlos and put his helmet on his head, looking out for him as if he was his little brother, At least like he was one now. "Kill Zone?" Carlos asked.

"I have no Idea just don't die yet."

As soon as the whistle blew Ben passed to Jay and knocked someone over, The cheerleader's cheered him on. Jay hit Chad knocking him down. Most of the cheerleaders were loving it Audrey was annoyed though. Jay was able to knock everyone out of his way and flip and roll though the kill Zone.

Jay ran towards Carlos, "Jay, It's me! It's Carlos! Wait, stop, Jay. Stop! No, no, no, no. No!" Carlos threw his bat at Jay then fell down pulling the shield over him. Jay knocked Ben out of the way, The only ones who stood a chance being Ryder and Aaron both of whom he laid out flat, Aaron because he wasn't as strong and Ryder cause he was tired from yelling his lungs out, He hit the Ball at the net and scored.

He then tried to hit the goalie who ran away scared, "Ahh! Oh, yeah! Come on, let's go! Oh! Whoo! Whoo, whoo! Oh! Oh" he threw down his bat helmet and gloves, he flipped doing a small victory dance. He saw Ella up on the bleachers behind the cheerleaders giving him a smirk and a wink. She crossed her arms and walked off satisfied with how much of a brute her partner was. Jay smiled in a

love sick fashion he loved when he made her proud and he would go through any form of torment to see that again and again.

"Coach blew the whistle, "You! Get over here!" He did as told. "What do you call that? I call that raw talent. Come find me later. I'll show you something you haven't seen before. It's called a rule book. Welcome to the team, son." he patted Jay's shoulder who just kinda looked at his hand. The Coach turned to Carlos and Aaron "you ever thought about band?"

Carlos gave him a fake laugh, Aanron was not amused and Jay full on started laughing at his smaller, more scared friends. "I'll work with them coach." Ben said

"Alright," he said unsure, "let's run that again."

Chad stayed behind Jay to try to be tough but Jay just slammed into his shoulder.

After another run though and a round of crazy energy drinks Ryder was on the team using a similar kind of brute force as Jay, just a little more strategy like everything he did there was always a plan.

~~~

In the hallway Ben Audrey and Chad were walking to cool off after practice, After Ben went to talk with Mal. Chad and Audrey had been listing off what they had to do for the coronation, kinda miffed that they didn't have anyone to do this for them. And that leads out to now where they were all at a picnic table.

Ryder passed By with Aaron, now wearing a jersey and notebook in his hand as he planned out his every move with Mal, and hoped to get Uma here. Aaron stirred him as he almost bumped into Audrey. "Ryder put the book away. You're gonna fall and I'm gonna laugh then have to explain to your sister why we're both sprawled out on the floor."

Chad stopped laughing with Audrey as Ben called out to them, "Ryder Aaron." Both whipped around hands headed to the pockets or in Aarons case inside his jacket. When they saw it was just Ben
~~~

they dropped their fighting stance but didn't untense. "Wanna sit with us." Both the prince and princess across gave him a horrified look.

They glared, "What do you want from us Princeling." Ryder spat, closing his book and placing it in his worn out Messenger bag.

Ben was taken aback but answered in the same polite tone "Just to talk." Neither looked convinced, "You know we were friends when we were kids, I don't remember much but I know we were really good friends." Aaron looked at Ryder as if asking for permission, he nodded and approached carefully. It was clear to Ben that Ryder and Ella were the leaders of their little posy.

Both Carefully sat down being sure not to be too close to Ben, Aaron who had a concealed Dagger strapped to his hip kept his hand on the handle at all times. "You said we were friends?" Ryder asked. Ben nodded, "Could You do me a favor, Nothing big just um." He pulled a purple envelope out of his bag with the words: Uma Cecelia Pirates bay. "I need to send this to my....friend."

Aaron scoffed, "You mean your toy."

Ryder punched him so hard he fell off the bench, "Uma's not a toy."

The boy picked himself up and grabbed his Pirate hat, placing it back on his head, "You know damn well Ella would never let you and Uma happen."

Ryder tugged at the blue lock of hair and turned back to Ben, "Just could you please send this to her she seemed really upset with me for coming in the first place. I didn't get to tell her I was leaving before we had to go. And Please don't tell Ella, She told me to stop tripping over myself for her."

Ben took the note carefully, "yeah I get it, I'll send it to her, But why does Ella care who you date."

The older boy was the one to answer, "In her words, date no one below you only above and strive for the top boys. And compared to Us Uma is below we're at the top." He looked like he was thinking

of all the hell he had caused with an evil grin on his face. He shook his head, "So tell us about us being, 'friends'"

Ben nodded excitedly, "Like I said I can't remember much just that we used to play with Audrey and Chad a lot." Both looked uncomfortable being mentioned to who may as well be villain kids.

"Do you remember what we did to get sent away?" Aaron asked, Hand still on his dagger while admiring the anchor tattoo on his arm, Quest hearts did a good job she was an artsy girl.

"I just remember your eyes glowing, Me and Jazzy didn't really know each other but yours Ella and Ryders did at the same time so I assume her's did too. You can ask Aziz whenever you meet him that's Jazzy's brother and you have an older sister named Melody." they nodded numbly. "I'm hopeful that we can get your parents here for family day."

Ryder's eyes glowed violently making Aaron Lurch forward and unknown to the others present the other six across the school fall forward. He breathed but a dark shadow fell over his face. "Why would we wanna meet those who betrayed us, Gave us away?"

Audrey was the one to answer, feeling personally offended by the slander of Rapunzel. She scoffed, "they did not give you away you were violently ripped from your beds in the middle of the night and they were held down and forced to watch you call out for help." She turned her head whipping her hair dramatically.

The two boys shared a glance and a smirk, "What an interesting idea." Aaron let out a harsh Chuckle.

"We have to go." Ryder said, looking at his watch.

"Free period is for another twenty minutes."

"We didn't say we were going to class." Ryder called, not looking back.

~~~

The sight of An angry blond was one neither wanted to see upon
~~~

entering Mal and Evies dorm, "Were in the world- for the love of the-"

"Sun oh my sun drop the whole shabang, Listen." Aaron copied, leading to a glaring Ella and Jazzy with a glowing hand, "Our Parent didn't give us up we were snatched," he grinned it was almost sickening.

Ella's face morphed from a glare to a sinister smirk, "So there's a reasonable vendetta against Auradon."

Jazzy's smirk was crazed and full of blood lust, she had a doll that looked oddly like Beast lying on the table and her dagger in its head, "And I'm sure all these kings and queens would do anything for their poor damaged babies."

"Guys I think we might get some Allies, Adults powerful adults."

"And if they don't?" Carlos asked, holding out his arms for Jazzy who decided to fall back on top of him and lay in the smaller boy's lap, Basically claiming her control again. She reached up a bit and caressed his check making him look her in the eye, both of their eyes glowing. The boy who was so touch and affection starved was so easily manipulated it was almost sad.

"Then we make them, they have so little without their children, a parents whole life should be their child, It won't take much convincing." Ella responds possibilities run though her mind, "Explain to the boys Mal's Idea guys." Ella said generally not entirely present anymore.

Ryder grabbed Mal's hand and led her to sit on the bed with him and threaded his fingers through her hair so she could tell him all they missed. His sister's words rang in his ears, "remind her who her ticket to Power is, Put her in her place, or on the other hand treat her like I treat Jay. Love her." The implication behind her words were clear: he wasn't to be A king for Uma he wasn't to be hers, Mal was to be his Queen and that was their fate whether he liked it or not and Mal needed to remember that.

I have to travel home in the morning and its gonna be a long ride with not wi-fi, I'll probably be on the train by my normal Tuesday upload time so here it is. Also I don't know if any of you here are reading masked Queen but expected and early upload for that tomorrow cause I have a 4 hour meeting for school
~DarkVixen

Teenfic

Okay I'm sorry and I will take this down once this is all over and a website called Teenfic is stealing creators stories myself included ever last one. I'm afraid to even update them. There's a petition to take the site down

https://chng.it/qTGc7qXrP4

Type it into the search bar and the petition will come up

this isnt fair we worked hard and our work is getting stolen.

~DarkVixen

Chapter Six

Mal was mixing up the spell and Jazzy read from the book, "All right. It says that we still need one tear, and l never cry."

"Me neither," Mal added.

"I don't think any one of us do." Ryder said Side eyeing Carlos who blushed deep red, there was a reason Ella said to make out with Carlos and not Mal, his Queen to be.

"Lets Just chop up some onions" Carlos said grabbing one trying to draw away the memory it was painful and depressing. Dude was next to him sitting in a bowl.

Aaron looked up at him, He couldn't see his eyes, his hair was in his face messier than usual giving him more of the rugged pirate look he had back on the isle, "No. It's a tear of human sadness. And Potions need to be followed exactly."

"A tear's a tear, " Jay said.

"That's not true, Jay. They both have antibodies and enzymes, but an emotional tear has more protein-based hormones than a reflex tear."

Mal and Ella smiled at smart Evie "Listen to You."

Jazzy added her own two senses on magic, "Messing up a potion could cause irreparable harm."

"There you are, Mal! I was looking for you." Lonnie said, Jazzy placed the book down Quickly and Mal quickly covered it with a tissue. Ella shook her head. They spazzed too easily, she drew a circle in the air and the book was gone from the naked eye "You know, all the girls want you to do their hair! Midnight snack, huh? What are you guys making?"

"Oh Nothing special. Just cookies." Lonnie leaned over to dip her

finger In. "Oh, no, no!"

"No! Wait." They all freaked out.

Lonnie didn't understand the big deal, "I'm not gonna double dip."

"Feel anything?" Evie asked

"Yeah, like maybe it might be missing something?" Jazzy added

Jay walked up and leaned on a poll "Hey."

Lonnie looked at him weirdly. "Could use some chips." She said Ella slapped Jay's arm and curled her finger.

This made him lean down to his girlfriends height, hands already shaking, "You may have toys but you are mine remember that," She growled and nipped his ear making him jump back but smirk as he stood up straight.

Lonnie walked to the fridge, Everyone was calm down. "And those are?" Mal asked, referring to the 'chips'.

"Chocolate chips. Just the most important food group." Lonnie started to sprinkle them in, "Wait, didn't your moms ever make you guys, like, chocolate chip cookies?" The Vk's looked confused. The Ak's glared, "Like, when you're feeling sad, and they're fresh from the oven, with a big old glass of milk, and she just makes you laugh and puts everything into perspective and... why are you all looking at me like that?" They had all looked at her with a sad confused face that looked like they were asking, That's what Moms do? The Ak's shook their fist in Anger knowing that they could have had all this if Beast never ripped them away from home.

"It's just different where we're from." Ella said Leaning back on the counter, her dagger twirling in her hand.

"Yeah, I know. I just, you know, I thought... Even villains love their kids, Adopted or not." They all looked away.

Except Jazzy, "Facilair does what he can but with three of us girls, no mom, and work there's only so much and it's not like we get

candy on the isle it's what you all throw away."

"You really though Villains would Love their Adopted Children they barely love their real Children." Ella snapped

"Oh... How awful." Mal saw tears running down Lonnie's face. She wiped away the tear and dropped it in the bowl.

Mal pretended *Cough Really Cough* tried to shake off the feeling, "Yeah, well, big bummer, but we have to get these into the oven, so thank you so much for coming by. Really, really have a good night. I'll see you tomorrow. Evil dreams." Mal and Ryder pushed her out.

Lonnie called out goodnight over her shoulder. Ella turned back, "Okay boys cookie sheets Evie oven. Jazzy scoop"

"Yes Ma'am" Evie replied. Ella smiled at the name, she knew what she was doing. This was her show whether Mal and the other Vk's noticed or not This was Ella's Puppet show with all of their strings in her hand and they were bound to her. She knew what she was doing and had no regrets.

Chapter Seven

The first thing Aaron did when he woke up was shoot towards the bathroom. You see Evie had taken a liking to Chad and whether she knew it or not yet, Doug. Aaron had to remind her who was in charge, who she belonged to. Because yes she belonged to him just like Mal belonged to Ryder, Jay belonged to Ella and Carlos belonged to Jazzy. They were the ones who were running the show; without them the VK's would have no power. They wouldn't even know about who they were. After he was showered and dressed he was out the door in three minutes, "See you later Ryder." the boy who was sitting on his bed lacing up his boot nodded knowing where Aaron was going.

He found Evie in the hall and stopped her, "Okay."

"Hi, what did you wanna talk about?" she asked. He had told her while they were making the cookies last night that he needed to talk to her.

"Gossip travels faster in Auradon than the Isle love," She bit her lip she already knew what was coming and braced herself for yelling and a possible spell in her direction, he circled her like she was his prey "Word around the place is you might have a thing with Chad." he gripped her shoulders tight and whispered in her ear.

She tried to control her shaking but she was the worst at concealing her feelings and while she could keep her body under her well trained control she wasn't perfect and Aaron could still feel it like an earthquake at his fingertips. "N-no it's not like that i swear."

"Then what is it like, love?"

She racked her brain and came up with a well organized excuse, "I was just trying to get information from him."

"Then why were you doing his homework?" he circled back around

and grabbed her chin forcing her to meet his gaze, one full of lust, bloodlust barely kept at bay bubbling under the surface. She wanted anything then for that gaze to be for her, because he would follow through.

She calmed her breath so there would be no tremble in her words, "I had to get him to trust me."

Aaron shook his head, Evie couldn't tell if he was calm or not. "Do me a favor and don't." he snapped under his breath, "You are mine, I am your key to power, you can finally be a queen just like you always wanted." he almost sounded sweet. His hand moved from her chin in a hard grip to her cheek caressing it gently, a motion that Evie instinctually leaned into. "Everything I do is for you, love, please don't make me waste my time, remember what I always say."

"Time is the most precious thing in the world, it's the one thing we can never steal back."

"Good" he praised bringing her into his chest and running his hand through her hair.

She hummed and looked up at him, "Can I keep him as a toy though." She gave him baby doll eyes that he couldn't refuse.

"That can be arranged," She squealed, "But at a later date right now we must focus on getting the wand, we can't be distracted without it you are no more a Queen then Mal is right now."

Later Ella was trying to get in some target practice before they spelled Ben in case she needed to lay him out flat . She was Hitting every bullseye at least twice. As she loses another Arrow, Jay comes up, "Nice shot."

"Thanks. What's up?" Ella asked, looking relieved for once. She didn't ever really relax and she only did around Jay as she was comfortable around him. She knew their relationship was a bit toxic but it had to be. You didn't survive on the isle otherwise, and he was ungrateful. Sometimes everything she was doing was so he could be the king he was always meant to be and he just had to go and flirt with other girls before she could get him there. He can

have his toys later.

Jay Shook his head, "Nothing just wanted to see you." He said in a soft voice his eyes shined and glowed in admiration for his queen.

She smiled as her eyes glowed back. It was small things like that which reminded her why she wanted Jay to begin with. Carlos was too shy and stutter-y for her taste and she had practically raised Aaron. She fell back on the grass and looked up at the clouds. Jay laid next to her. She snuggled into his side, "You know I love you right." she turned and looked up at him, "I know I don't say it a lot but I do."

Jay looked at the blond Princess, "I know, and I know I can be a knucklehead sometimes." They both laughed, "but you've always got your head in the game, you always plan ahead, I know as soon as we win It's gonna be us. Right?" he asked sitting up

She nodded, "You and me darlin' you and me forever." she followed up after him

He smiled, touching his head to hers, "that's all I want."

Her hands were on his cheeks and he looked directly at her, "you'll get that and so much more."

Unlike the other six Jay and Ella truly loved each other no matter how messed up and toxic their relationship was. Ella may have to manipulate him at times but his feelings were genuine and so were hers. She didn't know what she would do without him. She didn't want him for any reason rather than still having that little Auradon princess in her at the time who still believed in true love. And she truly loved Jay.

The prince of thieves was quite possibly the only one with his mind set on the wand 24/7. If getting that wand meant never ending happiness with Ella, well he wanted it as soon as possible. He gave her a long loving kiss before she taped his chest and pulled away, "We have to spell Ben." she stood and hauled him up, "A boast would be nice right about now." He placed a hand on her chest and sent a burst of energy though her.

Audrey was complaining about Mal, "Do you think they actually paid for those?" she whined about the two doing people's hair.

Jay was hanging over the railing talking to some girls, his flirtatious attitude tuned down after his talk with Ella who was leaning on the lockers glaring at the girls who thought he was flirting. "She did it to Jane's hair, too, and Fairy Godmother's not happy about it."

"What's the harm?" Ben asked.

"It's gateway magic! Sure, it starts with the hair. Next thing you know It's the lips and the legs and the clothes and then everybody looks good and then... where will I be?" Audrey whined.

Jazzy heard this and Popped up behind her without either knowing , "It's not gateway magic you Egotistical, shallow, two dimensional rich girl stereotype" The girl yelled too shocked to even process the string of insults, "Its prophetic."

"What prophecy," she asked, hanging on to Ben for dear life,

"the one about us changing this backwards town." Ryder added sliding out from behind the lockers almost melding out of the shadows. "Nothing major, we all have them we just don't use them much, Mal is a fairy though, so snuffing her power would kill her, Your crazy people already clipped and killed her wings like your grandfather did to her mother."

"Wings?" Ben asked, his voice actually really sad.

"Yes," Jazzy said Bluntly. Her face morphed into a smile, "I'm gonna go find Carlos." and she Skipped away and hated herself afterwards.

Ryder slid away without reason and left Ben to Audrey for the last time. "I will see you at the game after my dress-fitting for the coronation, okay?" she asked, trying to forget the plausible lie that Jazzy just fed her. There was no way they were part of a prophecy and she wasn't.

"Okay"

"Bye, Bennyboo." She kissed his cheek and walked away shaking.

"Bye" he said, sounding tired and annoyed.

Mal slammed her locker closed and turned to the King to be "Hey Bennyboo,"

"Hey," Ben smiled.

Mal walked up to him with a sway in her step that Ella practiced with her for hours finally giving up and admitting it will do, "We just made a batch of cookies. Double chocolate chip, do you guys want one?" she asked them in a sickly sweet voice, They didn't catch the sickly part. Allowing her eyes to glow just a bit adding to her appeal.

"Oh, I, uh, We've got a big game. We don't eat before a big game. But thank you so, so much. Thank you. Next time. Next time," Ben said.

Mal nodded pretending to be hurt "No, yeah. I completely understand. "Be careful of treats offered by kids of villains"

Ben tried to correct her, "No, no, no."

Mal added "No, I'm sure every kid in Auradon knows that."

"No, that's not it. No, no, no, I... I really do..." Ben tried again.

She shook her head "No, I get it. You're cautious. That's smart. Oh, well, more for me, I guess."

Mal placed cookies near her mouth pretending to take a bite. "No, no. Hey..." Ben grabbed the cookie out of her hand "see that? Totally trust you. Totally."

"How are they?" Mal asked, her eyes shining their neon green color.

"They're good. They're great! They're amazing! They're, uh... I mean, they're chewy and, and you know, they... is that walnuts? I love walnuts." Ben gazed at Mal, "Have you always had those little golden flecks in your eyes?" she nodded sweetly.

She grabbed the cookie when they were half done to stop any super

strong effects. Jay came up behind them, "How you feeling, Bro?"

Ella was on the other side smiling innocently, "Ben what's going on what are you feeling." she inched a bit of Auradon sweetness into her voice, its what it would have been if she wasn't hardened and broken by the isle. If there was no gravel, hoarseness or straining. If she had just healed herself but she wouldn't her voice was a battle scar and she intended to keep it till the end of her life.

"I feel... I feel... I feel like... Like singing your name. Mal, Mal." They covered Ben's mouth and had Aaron pull him to the locker room.

~~~

"Excuse me. Excuse me. Can I have your attention, please? There's something I'd like to say. Give me an "M"!" Ben shouted

"M"!

"Give me an "a"!"

"A"!

"Give me an "I"!"

"L"!"

"What does that spell?"

"MAL!"

"Come on, I can't hear you!"

"MAL!"

"I love you, Mal! Did I mention that?" Ella couldn't stop the laugh that escaped her lips. Making Mal glare at her but she backed down when Ella widened her eyes and smiled, this girl scared her.

"Give me a beat! Whoo!" Ben called out"

Jazzy laughed really loudly "For the love of voodoo did you see Audrey's face."
~~~

"Uno, dos, tres, quatro!" Doug said.

♫ Did I mention ♫

♫ That I'm in love with you? ♫

♫ Did I mention ♫

♫ There's nothing I can do ♫

♫ And did I happen to say ♫

♫ I dream of you everyday ♫

♫ But let me shout it out loud ♫

♫ If that's okay-ay-ay (Hey!) ♫

♫ If that's okay (Hey!) ♫

♫ I met this girl that rocked my world ♫

♫ Like it's never been rocked ♫

♫ And now I'm living just for her ♫

♫ And I won't ever stop ♫

♫ I never thought it can happen to a guy like me ♫

♫ But now look at what you've done ♫

♫ You got down on my knees ♫

Jay winked at Ella whose eyes were currently glued to him. She smiled suggestively. She really loved him and she hated that weakness but she wouldn't trade it for the world.

♫ Because my love for you is ridiculous ♫

♫ Because my love for you is ridiculous ♫

♫ I never knew (Who knew?) ♫

♫ That it can be like this ♫

♫ My love for you is ridiculous ♫

♫ My love is R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S! (R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S!) ♫

♫ It's (RIDICULOUS!) ♫

♫ Just (RIDICULOUS!) ♫

♫ And I would give my kingdom for just one kiss ♫

♫ Well, did I mention... ♫

♫ That I'm in love with you ♫

♫ And did I mention ♫

♫ There's nothing I can do ♫

♫ And did I happen to say? ♫

♫ I dream of you everyday ♫

♫ ♫ But let me shout it out ♫

♫ If that's okay-ay-ay (Yeah!) ♫

♫ If that's okay ♫

♫ I gotta know which way to go ♫

♫ C'mon gimme a sign ♫

♫ You gotta show me that ♫

♫ You're only ever gonna be mine ♫

♫ Don't want to go another minute ♫

♫ Even without you ♫

♫ That's if your heart just isn't in it ♫

♫ I don't know what I'd do. ♫

♫ Because my love for you is ridiculous ♫

♫ I never knew (Who knew?) ♫

♫ That it can be like this ♫

♫ My love for you is ridiculous ♫

♫ My love is R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S! (R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S!) ♫

♫ It's (RIDICULOUS!) ♫

♫ Just (RIDICULOUS!) ♫

♫ And I would give my kingdom ♫

♫ For just one kiss ♫

♫ C'mon now! ♫

♫ Because my love for you is ridiculous ♫

♫ I never knew (Who knew?) ♫

♫ That it can be like this ♫

♫ My love for you is ridiculous ♫

♫ My love is R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S! (R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S!) ♫

♫ It's (RIDICULOUS!) ♫

♫ Just (RIDICULOUS!) ♫

♫ And I would give my kingdom ♫

♫ For just one kiss ♫

♫ C'mon now! ♫

"I love you, Mal! Did I mention that?" by now he was right in front

of Mal. He tried to kiss her and she held up his jersey that he had thrown to her to stop him.

"Chad's my boyfriend now! And I'm going to the coronation with him. So I don't need your pity date." Audrey said, trying to steal attention away from Ben and Mal. Ella glared at Audrey with so much hate it scared Mal. her eyes glowing violently, it took everything in Mal not to lurch forward the rest weren't so lucky Carlos even fell to the ground.

"Whoa!" the crowd gasped when Audrey tried to kiss Chad.

Ben snatched the microphone back and practically yelled into it "Mal! Will you go to the coronation with me?"

"Yes!" she yelled back into the mic.

"She said yes!" he cheered. Ella nodded to Ryder slightly, the message was clear: keep an eye on her, she can't fall in love.

"Let's go, Ben. The whole team's waiting for you" Jay said, coming up to the stand.

"Yeah" he said, walking down and glancing at Mal.

Jay looked at Ella and leaned down "see ya later Nightlight."

The princess grinned and pulled on his jersey. "Oh you definitely will thief"

"Bye," Mal called out.

"What a victory. What a day for the Auradon knights, finally winning back the trophy after so many years." The announcer finally got his mic back.

Mal and Ella looked over at a stone-faced Evie, "I feel really sorry for Audrey." Mal said. No response "I mean she was talented like you, and she knew how to sew and knew beauty tips, that she wouldn't need a prince to make her feel better about herself." Mal said.

Evie looked at Mal, her eyes holding an anger like she had never displayed before. "I have a prince and so do you. I don't need Chad to be a queen. I already will be one; he is merely a toy for me to play with along the way."

Jazzy nodded at Evie, "You've finally accepted fate?"

"What is there to accept? It was always to be."

"Good girl Evie, See Mal you don't have to love my brother just accept him." Ella said, walking down the stands to meet with Jay.

"Yeah, yeah!" Jay yelled holding up his MVP trophy.

"And there he is. Jay, the most valuable player. How do you like that?"

She raced over to him, "Very much actually." and she kissed him with the whole school watching and cheering, except ironically the cheerleaders. Who were glaring at the princess.

"Not saying I want one but why are Ella and Jay the only ones allowed a love story?"

"You could have one if you accept Ryder." Jazzy said bluntly.

Mal whipped around, "How do I accept a boy who drew me from a deck of cards?" she crossed her arms, "whatever I don't care. Love is weak."

Jazzy walked down, "You know he actually wanted to be with you." She kept going and walked over to Carlos who placed an arm around her always wanting to be cared for and feeling loved after years without it.

This was a treat cause i start school next week and don't know how often ill get to upload yet
~DarkVixen

Back to School Special

~~~7 years ago~~~

A ten year old Ella walked down the corridor of Dragon Hall with her eight year old bothers hand clutched tight in hers, an nine year old Aaron fell into step with them, the school was practically empty villains didn't get to school on time. They weren't here on time for classes, They were hear on time for Jazzy, Dr. Facilier was the headmaster of Dragon hall, and so happened to be their fourth members adoptive father and magic tutor.

Summer had just ended causing Aaron who hated Dragon hall with a passion into a fit. his older sister Holly went to Dragon hall too but Harry and CJ went to serpent prep, a boarding school on the other side of the isle. Despite caring for his sister, he was closer with Harry, he only went to Dragon Hall because Jazzy, Ella and Ryder had to come here. Gothel was the selfishness 101 teacher.

That was admit ably Ella's favorite class. With out even Knocking the three stormed into Facilier's office, knocking Jazzy who was to close to the door, To the ground Ella leaned down over the ten year old, "Get up!" she snapped making Jazzy snarl but stand anyway. "Todays the day Shadow man." Ella smirked sitting in her seat, purple and black painted with a blacked out sun.

She picked Ryder up and sat him in his next to her which was blue and white with a shattered mirror, Aarons was red and black with a hook and Jazzy's was brown and purple with a tarot card on the back. "Alright children all right," Faciller was the one adult on the isle to know about the prophecy and was helping them achieve their goals, "Jazzy lest see it." Jazzy flicked her Cards between her hands shuffled them and held them out to her friends. She then handed the stack to her father and pulled one out herself.

The flipped them over and red through the meanings, these cards

were their mirrors they were the ones closet in age to themselves that way its easier to find them, Ella was first, "sneaky confident and slick. The aura is orange which also means thrill seeking." she stared at the silhouette on the card. it looked familiar and it actually made her smile.

Next was Ryder "Anxious Jumpy, prodigy."

"Great a scared nerd." Aaron huffed.

"Shut up." Jazzy slapped his arm, "Aura color?"

"Red."

"So he's Passionate and angry. We can work with that."

Then Aaron, "A sneaky smart, ruthless leader."

Ella hissed, "That's not good."

"Her auras green deceitful and jealous, We'll need to straighten her out."

Last was Jazzy, "Flirty, Pleasant, Loyal a dark blue Aura again loyal and also creative."

"We'll work with it."

"She's also a princess." Jazzy groaned seeing the crown on the silhouettes head.

Ryder scrunched up his eyebrows "But The only princess on the isle is Evie Queen and she was banished 2 years ago."

"Its not like she could have gotten off the isle we'll find her." Ella sneered.

"Alright kids off to class you are already sufficiently late."

~~~

All day the four were wondering who these people were. Around lunch as everyone was leaving Ella felt some one grip her arrow
~~~

head necklace. It was the last thing she had from Auradon. She reached behind her a wiped around her eyes flashing gold. The boy lurched forwarded hand still on her necklace. Ella looked at his crumpled form with a tilted head and jumped back as if burned effectively getting his grasp off her. She had never met him before but she knew who he was, Son of Jafar, but that's all she knew, not his name personality or how his mind worked, Not yet anyway.

Jay lurched forward pain searing though him starting from his eyes and spreading down his body, stopping at his chest, and continuing to engulf him as if he was on fire as quickly as it came, it went. He realized he was on the ground and sat up lookin at a girl who was sitting on a desk one leg bent up with her elbow resting on it biting on her nail. her other hand Playing with her chain and Her other leg dangling down. the little bit of sunlight that streamed in behind creating what looked like a glowing crown on her head she was beautiful...well as beautiful as a ten year old can see another.

She saw him staring and removed her hand from her mouth. she tiled her head and furred her brows she decided to teste the waters. She made her eyes light up again and again he violently fell forward back down on the stone floor. she pulled out the card and back at him. he was standing now on the defense in the shadows. His dark hair like a curtain behind him his eyes now ablaze orange either unknowing or unwilling his bare arms relatively built for a ten year old. He almost looked like a shadow, an identical silhouette.

She reached into her jacket pocket and handed him something, her hand shot out so quick the boy tried to dodge and avoid her. Now he was hanging on to the book case that was behind him about three selves up. Ella raised and eyebrow but shrugged. she flourished her hand showing that she was only handing him a card she placed it on the ground and kicked it forward. She grabbed her satchel and walked out. After she was gone Jay picked up the card that simply stated, 'Answers...10pm sinister society house very back room. Ella Gothel- Westergaard.' no words were spoken during the whole encounter.

~~~
~~~

During his lunch break, Aaron felt eyes on him, he looked out the corner of his eye and saw a girl with purple hair lurking near, He knew who she was, heck everyone did after the birthday fiasco two years ago, She was Mal daughter of Maleficent. They had never spoken or even looked at each other much less had her creeping around him. She never bothered with him, But today was different, today she had caught sight of the chain attached to his coat with and anchor charm on it encrusted with what looked like real... well all she could call them her gems. Beautiful gleaming, twinkling red gems. She knew who he was, everyone did, but that wasn't going to stop her. She lunged for him only for him to roll out of the way last minute she tried again and the two broke out into a physical fight.

Aaron's eyes gleamed making Mall fall forward on her face. He raised an eyebrow and Pulled out the card, they held a similar stance and body shape, he tried again and she fell forward again. she rubbed her eyes hitting the side of her head making him assume that she had magic already that was being suppressed and she suspected it. He Pulled her up only to pull part of her jacket and shit down by accident, on her back he saw two long jagged painful looking scars. "Ouch." he said in the most monotone voice he could muster.

She hissed like a snake and jumped away, he thrusted out his hand where he held a card out for her, "What's this junk!" she snapped still eyeing the Jewel.

"You want answers I'll give you answers." he walked around her "I'll help you with control" with that he away.

Mal raised an eyebrow at his retreating figure and looked at the card that was handed to her 'Answers...10pm sinister society house very back room. Aaron Hook.'

~~~

Ryder didn't leave the school at lunch, ever, fortunately neither did a scared little boy and one of his bullies. Ryder peaked around a corner and noticed her horrid sister Ginny shove a red, black, and white clad boy in a locker.
~~~

The Small royal had been watching Carlos all day though he had never met him before and only seen him from time to time, but one could guess who he was buy his clothing, Carlos Devil son of Cruella Devil. He had a similar silhouette to the card in his bag. He walked up to the locker and violently made his eyes light up. The locker door jerked, he heard a bang and Carlos Groan out an 'Owe' he tried again and the same thing.

Making his decision he slipped a card though the top of the locker, Carlos made a small noise of acknowledgement. As he heard foot steps walk away Carlos took a last minute stab in the dark. "Ryder is it? Could you maybe let me out."

Carlos felt a bang on the locker and the door swung open but no one was around, all he caught was a white leather coat swishing around the corner.

~~~

Evie Had been castle (more like cave) schooled for the last two years, so when the Evil Queen didn't feel like teaching she got off scot free today was one of those days. Evie looked out her window and saw a girl on the roof top across from her own she was perched on the ledge, staring at her, her eyes lit up and Evie fell forward pain encasing her.

She felt like her eyes were going to melt, It happened two more times before the pain ceased. when she looked again the girl was right in front of her window. Evie through it open demanding answers, "What the hell was that how did you...what did you?"

Jazzy placed a finger on the other princesses lips. "I can tell you how, I can answer your questions, But not here, not now." She pulled out a card and handed it to her.

"I can't leave the Castle I'm banished and even if I could I have no idea where the sinister society house is."

"Fine I'll come get you but you need to come. It's important."

"What could be so important that we defy Maleficent orders."
~~~

Jazzy Pulled out her Tarot card, "You and your future as a queen. Ever heard of the prophecy of Eight?"

She nodded, "Every VK does, *The old order will be uncurled They will band together to change the world.* All that nonsense every one hopes to be one of the four from here."

Jazzy smirked, *"Four from here for from there."* She pointed at Auradon, "I'll tell you everything tonight at the sinister society house with the rest of us there." and she jumped down form the window. Evie's eyes widened and she looked down only to see Jazzy sneaking around a corner and on to the busy streets.

It was Destiny they met that day. The Four VK's met The Four Royals for the first time that day on the isle. If you would have told them that they would get the chance to rule the world one day they wouldn't have been so apprehensive about meeting them at the sinister society house. If you told them it lead them to their destiny they would have thought your crazy but been intrigued enough to go. But if you told them they would find love from this, they would have never stepped for in the club house.

~~~the second part will be up later~~~ Vixen is tired~~~Vixen hasn't slept properly in four years~~~Apologies for typos

Back to School Special Part 2

~~~7 years ago~~~

Jazzy met Evie at her window again, "Ready?" Evie nodded Nervously, "good cause we were leaving now either way. Meet me at the door." and again like clockwork Jazzy dropped to the ground below.

Evie ran down stairs and met Jazzy who was now leaning on the guardrail. "What if Mal or Maleficent sees me?" Evie asked fear coursing though her body as she holds on to Jazzy's arm.

The shadow girl pushed her off, "Don't worry about that, Maleficent only comes to the Sinister society on Wednesday's as for Mal, well don't worry about her. And don't touch me unless i say you can." she snapped.

They walked in silence the rest of the way.

Ella was already in the sinister societies back room with her feet up and a drink in hand when Mal and Jay walked in, "Wow on time much."

"Aaron promised me control," Mal sneered.

"You promised me answers," Jay added.

You couldn't see much though the strobing purple lighting of the club but that did little to conceal the glowing of their eyes in annoyance. "Its gonna take more then that to make me slam my head on the table you two."

The two grumbled but sat opposite of Ella on two patched up leather chairs, two glass bottles and a bottle opener slid across the table. they looked up at her and saw her opening another bottle of soda. "Your with that group of those Auradonians aren't you." Mal

asked rhetorically, "What are goodies goodies like you doing on the isle."

Ella threw her head back and laughed, "We were two damn bad for Auradon."

"What could a couple of royal kids do, Color outside the line, Oh maybe your curtsied wrong." Jay gasped in horror making both him and Mal laugh.

"We threatened they way of life." Mal and Jay immediately stopped and looked over to Ella in actually horror and admiration as she watched Aaron approach.

Aaron walked in a little later dragging Ryder who had Carlos by the arm, "They got stuck in the crowd, They're so damn small." Ella shrugged and passed over the box of sodas. "Where are the last two?"

"On the way, she didn't know where the club was so Jazzy had to bring her over." Ella looked up and Saw Evie and Jazzy making their way though, "Speak of the devil. Aaron Hold down Mal, Ryder close the curtains when they get in."

"Wait what, Get off me!" Mal started screaming and thrashing as Jazzy and Evie walked in. Ryder closed the curtains bracing himself for the inevitable fight, "You! What is she doing here?" Aaron kept his hold on Mal and Evie hid behind him.

"If you'd be still for fifteen minutes we'd tell you," Aaron said Calmly.

Mal stopped thrashing, "You get ten." He nodded and sat Evie down next to Jay.

Ella scanned the four tapping her marron Nails on the table top. Besides Carlos these were the kids of some of the most dangerous Villains. Which meant they were also mistreated, that left room for Carlos to be as well. Perfect manipulation prey.

Jay was uncomfortable under her gaze but he didn't fold he started right back at her. She wasn't glaring so he didn't either, not yet at

least. he Felt as if her emerald eyes bored into his very soul picking apart every aspect of his life one by one. what ever she was looking for she must have found it because she smirked. "What is every kid on the isles one true hope?"

"To be part of the prophecy of Eight." he said automatically, his eyes flashing orange.

"Right right how does that one go again?" Ryder Smirked, it was so much more intense then should be allowed by and eight year old

"Four from here
Four from there
Four that will show that they care
The old order will be uncurled
They will band together to change the world
But if they act so naive they will underachieve
The bad and the glad
The good and the Misunderstood
The good who had
The Bad that withstood"

Mal recited robotically with green glowing eyes, she basically scared herself, yeah she had heard the prophecy every villain kid had, but she didn't know it word for word, at least she though she didn't.

Aaron smirked, "Bingo." He opened his soda and winked. "Now there was a second part to that prophecy." he cleared his throat.

"*Bad and good shall merge*

a radical change will surge

will it be for the best

or will their friends be put to rest

no fate is straight

especially for a certain eight

will four let evil reign and good be chained

or will the four be true and let good shine through"

Mal scoffed, "Sounds like more good guy Propaganda."

"I know right." Ella groaned. She threw her head back, "What most don't know is that since we were sent here, its changed, Do you two wanna give it a go." she gestured with her drink to Evie and Carlos. Before they could decline Carlos' eyes sparked up red

four have been
damaged to their very core
the royals have
brought about a pointless War
They try to restrain
the preordain
They abduct and
now its time to deconstruct

Then Evie's glimmered to life to finish reciting the unknow prophecy.

They tried to hide due to pride
now evil with upheaval
Four from here
Four from there
Eight brought together
by a fate so unfair
A threat yet met
Will be the royals biggest regret

"How did you do that?" Evie asked fear lacing her voice, "No magic is supposed to be done on the isle."

"We didn't" Ryder answered, "It just happens, you see prophecies must happen eventually but this does not determine the fate of an individual. If there's one a bout some one turning a certain age and they fit all the requirements, If they stop their ageing they are no longer a candidate or if you need to be marked as an equal for one

and your not you are no longer part of the prophecy. Auradon decided we were the ones that would bring down their precious barrier and created four more villains rather then letting everything play out."

"Once upon a time we would have been the children of prophecy because we decided to act on good and extend a hand to evil. now we are those children because we cant on evil and plan to demolish all the good love." the older Gothel sneered tossing her dagger at the wall only for it to land in-between the eyes of the prince on the poster.

"So were the other four kids?" Evie asked rhetorically, "How do you know?"

Jazzy grinned, "Because we said so, because we want it so. Once upon a time we extended that hand to you, making you the other four but now, we felt you. We wanted you."

"It wasn't conscious of course" Arron adds placing the cars on the table in front of the proper silhouette. "Our magic mingled with yours and latched on to you the moment we set foot on the isle our dimmed magic out out salvation and brought you to us. We latched on to your inner power."

Carlos whimpered like an injured pup, "But my mother had no power, I have no power."

"Oh silly pup." Ella giggled she stood and walked around the table to white and black Ombre haired boy. "Your mother once had magic, the ability to control animals but over time it faded, and lied dormmate until you showed up."

Jazzy stood and walked around to him as well, "And I reckon its really powerful, otherwise our magic wouldn't have latched on don't worry pup your magic is just as powerful as ours. You're just as important."

Carlos looked up at the girls with shinning eyes, not form magic but from Hope. the boy had never been told he was important or special it filled him with joy.

"we have the power to bring down Auradon one day, but to do it we all need to work together," Aaron told the other four.

They looked around at each other disgusted, "Villains don't usually do, 'together'" Jay snarked leaning back in his chair. It was honestly the most comfortable piece of furniture he had ever experienced.

"They do if there's crowns on the line." Jazzy say as she pulls an upright star card out of her Tarot deck, heart of the card style.

"Crowns" Evie perks up.

"The crowns of the four kingdoms, *'the royals have brought about a pointless War'* We have the power to knock them off their thrones. We can be their new rulers" Ryder agreed.

They still looked unsure, Time for Ella to put her manipulation skills to the test. "Jay." She took his hands in hers making him look at her like she was insane, " imagine it. never having to steal, you could just order something of some one and its given to you, Imagine having the life your father always said you should have." Hos eyes glazed over with greed, want, need.

She turned to Mal. "Revenge, on those who clipped them." she reached over her shoulder and touched the beginnings of her scars. "You standing tall, as all bow down to your power, all the powers of Hell. the right to truly earn your name" Mal looked off into the distance with a dazed smile.

Ryder tried his hand on Carlos and Evie. He wasn't as good as Ella but he could work his way around them. He took Carlos's hand, the poor boy filched. Ryder looked down at the reddened knuckles and frowned, "Freedom from you mom." she noticed Carlos touch his stomach, "away from her demanding nature, I don't find it likely that she cares about you more then her car or her coats." Carlos thinks back to all the times he's heard his mother call her car her baby or when she caressed and pet her furs but kicked him into the closet.

"And Evie," she looked up hope clear in her expression. They would need to train her, "beauty, painless, endless beauty, Mirrors, as

many as you want, silks dresses, Diamond earrings, no one telling you what to do, a kingdom to rule however you wanted, and when ever you asked 'whos the fairest of them all?' you know what the answer will be." She looked down ready to hear it her mother said it all the time, "You" she perked up again in shock, "Queen Evie." she leaned on her arm with a dreamy expression.

"We just have to work together, put aside our difference and call a truce." Jazzy finished.

Mal and Evie looked at each other, both made the first move, meeting in the middle and shaking hands. "To the end of Auradon?" Mal suggested.

"To the end of Auradon." Evie agreed.

Jay stood up and lifted Carlos gently to his feet. "No more fighting, were gonna need each other." he said shakily.

"so you're not gonna push me in a locker again?" Carlos asked unevenly curling into himself.

"No" Jay chuckled. "Do we get to come here now." Jay asked.

Ella rolled her eyes. "Yes we'll get you sinister society memberships."

"Awesome!"

"Wicked!"

"Now what?" Evie asked.

"Now we teach you about your magic. We can't use it here but even that dome cant block out all magic. we can feel it course though our brains like and electric pulse. It pump in our blood. If we feel around we could determine our powers. we could get a grips on them before we find away off this island, It'll do us no good to got off and have no grips they'll throw us right back in under a stronger lock and key we have one shot once were off and one shot only." Ella explained. "Oh and one last thing, none of your parents can know, if they did they'd just use you even more the they already

do."

And from that day on they fell into rhythm. The next day all eight walked into Dragon Hall like they owned the place even little Carlos devil kept pace and fell in step. when Ginny tried to grab him again she was instantly shut down my Mal who grabbed her by her collar and threw her back into a wall. Some one tried to steal form Evie, Aaron would hook them. Ella came under fire...well she could take care of her self but Jay was definitely getting more then a few licks in. They were a pack of Wolves, a gang, a troop, a team. If only half of the team wasn't so oblivious that in this endeavor, they would be cared for but to the rest they were a means to an end and easily conquered force and gods forbid they misbehaved.

And there's part two sorry it took longer then expected wording is difficult and we don't really get to see much of the isle so expanding on it its always a challenge. I hope you enjoyed this, the last on schedule update is this Tuesday till o can find a rhythm after the start of school.
~DarkVixen

Chapter Eight

[image]

To say Mal hated Ella was wrong, she didn't hate the girl she actually cared for her, she hated her manipulative attitude and how well it worked on her. She hated how Ella didn't see her as a threat; she was merely a constant noise in the back of her head to drown out, Mal was a speed bump on her way to corrupt the crown.

Mal didn't dare speak out of turn to Ella, Jazzy yeah it's not like she was going to make a deal with the shadow girl, Aaron, Definitely she was a dragon she hated water anyway, Ryder, less so but yeah she wasn't afraid of the dark. Ella was different. Ella could kill her where she stood simply by singing. And unlike her mother Ella could control the decaying incantation.

So imagine her fear when she found out Ryder could too. And she only found out because Jazzy levitated her with a gust of wind, "Ryder was making a date spot for you but got angry about something irrelevant and started muttering the decaying incantation." she looked down and sure as can be the grass was turning black.

"Ryder Gothel- Westergaard!" Ella shouted.

"Oh yeah and I called Ella," Jazzy added. Jazzy continued to levitate them not really caring about anything other than her book, She stomped passed muttering the healing incantation fixing the grass and flowers as she walked, "What have I told you about saying that spell wildly."

There was a muttered response, a slap and Ella walked away back to Jay who was at the edge of the forest not daring to step on the decaying lands.

Jazzy let Mal down and walked away without a word. "Sorry about that." Ryder smirked.

"Did she hit you?" Mal asked, holding Ryder's red cheek.

"Just a bit it's no big deal we're brother and sister, we would kill for each other or just kill each other there is no in between. I also did something stupid so I deserved it."

Mal didn't think that was okay but she said nothing. She was Evil after all, "I know Ben is probably gonna ask you out or something so I figured your first date should be with me since, yah know."

She nodded in understanding, though she was really annoyed that he thought he deserved her first date. It wasn't anything extravagant which Mal could Appreciate, it was literally some lunch and a talk about what they would do once they won, "I actually like Auradon, and I can't wait for the others to see it." Ryder smiled.

"Ry" He hummed, "Jazzy said you 'wanted me' but don't you have a thing with Uma it's not like it was with Carlos, as much as I hate the witch she made you happy right." Ah the memory of Carlos.

Ryder and Carlos were never a thing, They were each other's comfort objects being close in age and interest at the time. When Carlos was Running across the roofs with blood soaking his leather pants Ryder helped him, it was back when there was still a little Auradon in him. During those times whenever Carlos was harmed in that death closet or by his mother he would run to Ryder's Hideout. In those days Ryder became Carlos' object of affection and though Ryder did not feel the same sentiment he would feed into it to let the boy heal. Ella twisted Carlos' affections for him into a leash keeping Carlos with them with the Promise of Ryder. And then the day came when they drew the cards.

~~Flashback~~

The four royals held cards in their hands cards with their own symbols, A shattered Mirror, a blacked out sun, a hook, and a voodoo doll. In front of them laid four more cards. One with black and white crossbones, a crown, two dragons forming a heart, and a cobra. Ella's eyes were alight with joy. Some sort of insane crazed love, her hand inching forward unable to wait much longer. She bounced on the balls of her feet. A new ruby necklace in a heart

shape around her neck, not a bride but a gift. They had spent so much time together and he was so head over heels already, and whether she knew it or not Ella was so deeply in love, the every emotion she tries to keep from the rest of them. What a joy it must bee to find who might as well be your soulmate at only13.

"Alright, Ella go ahead." Jazzy sighed after she finished placing down the last Candle, This was no spell, despite how it looked. They weren't tying these VK's to them it was merely very dark outside.

Ella's hand shot out with speed no human should posses and grabbed Jays Card. She ran a thumb over it for a moment gazing at it dreamily before placing it back down on the table and placing her own card over it. she said nothing to the other three but they heard her mumble under her breath, "Mine." waved her hand at Aaron who was the second oldest almost carelessly. Jay had made her weak but it was a problem that she would find needed to be fixed in the coming years as she would continuously put off training and Plans to be with him. She would got to their mother and ask how to balance her life and love which would lead to the way Jay was treated under Ella's metaphorical spell today.

The hook rolled his yes and looked down at the cards, None of them would choose each other, they grew up together and raised one another it'd be to weird for them, "Evie" She said simply grabbing at her card, "She's less intense, Mal unnerves me, always looking at me like I'm the danger," Since Mal had found out she was a dragon and Aaron was Hydrokinetic it was like she was walking on eggshells around him and if they wanted them to trust them and work with them it wasn't a good idea to pear the two up.

"Jazzy" Aaron called noticing her hesitation between the two cards. He had to take the reigns since Ella was two busy staring off into the distance clutching her necklace. "What's wrong?"

Ella was snapped out of her stupor as she noticed Ryders worried eyes, She looked down at the card and rolled her eye, "Just chose one"

"But um" She scratched her neck.

"Is this about Gil cause the boy is as smart as a bag of rocks. You have the chance between to geniuses."

"But Carlos and Ryder-"

"Then pick Mal if you're so worried who do you want." Ella snapped, They all knew Jay was outside waiting to be let in so he didn't have to sleep on the rung in his fathers shop.

Jazzy looked between the two cards and sighed, she looked at Ryder and mouthed 'I'm sorry' dread filled him as she reached out and grabbed the card with the crossbones. "Me and Mal clash to much to lead together."

"So Ryder that leaves you with Mal, I know she's a year older but you should be fine." Ella assured him.

Over the next few years Ryder would do everything he could to no have to be with Mal, to not have to treat her like a queen, not because she didn't deserve it but because she wasn't his queen. She didn't seem to mind just as bothered at the prospect of being with anyone as he was at being with her. She had Harry but that was different there was no certainty there they could stop and move on whenever they wanted she didn't have that with Ryder she couldn't. He would meet Uma when going to pick up Aaron one day on his ship, and he to at the age of 13 found who he wanted to be with. The two would have an intense serious relationship for the next two years before he was shipped off to Auradon.

~~~End Flashback~~~

Ella chose Jay leaving Carlos to be paired off with Jazzy, claimed it just made things easier since none of the girls held any affections for each other. Carlos and Ryders throws of passion became less frequent, more rushed, and more of a rough lip lock than passionate kiss. Carlos was hurt but understood that he was no longer Ryder's prize, that was Mal even if he'd rather not spend time with her. It made him feel better actually for Ryder to tell him and cut things off slowly then for the boy to either drop him all at once or use him as a toy like he inevitably would use Uma. Carlos Knew that this was the only outcome were he would be loved and gain the power

to get away from his mother, he knew Jazzy was the lesser of Evils as he wouldn't be subjected to manipulation, seduction, or Bloodlust, and Jazzy was by far the most driven by her emotions, as her magic was, if she hated him she would let him know. To this Day Carlos is the only one in the dark about the fact that Ryder's affections weren't all fake at the time. Now they had passed but back then they meant something to the practically emotionless boy.

Now Jazzy was the object of affection for the boy who so badly needed love of his own, clinging to the hope for a love story like Ella and Jay. So desperately jealous of Jay's ability to make Ella of all people, the queen, the most villainous one of them all to fall madly in love with him. As for Uma, well she won Ryder's. "I loved Uma" He winced a bit at the past tense "at least I think that's what this is but at the end of the day we all know it can't happen, I need a powerful queen by my side, and that's you." He gently lifted Mal's chin, "and I'm willing to let that be you, If you'll accept me."

Mal knew the manipulation was coming: The words that would get her to love him or at least think she loved him, it was the only way the boy knew how to show he cared. She braced herself for promises of power and revenge she would not be controlled she would not crack.

But what he said shocked her, shook her to her very core, she wasn't prepared for it nothing could have, "Ella would respect you. Your mother would be proud of you, You would be just like if not better than her. No you would be better." That was it those golden words laced with lines spoken by a Silver tongue dripping with poison finally cracked Mal and made her love the boy sitting lazily next to her.

~~~On the isle~~~

Uma had been a right wreck ever since Ryder left her high and dry. She knew that their relationship was doomed from the start as Ella so desperately and constantly reminded her. But she never expected Ryder to just walk out on her, he was even more considerate and careful when he dropped Carlos, granted the boy was already fragile and was needed for their little take over plan. She just hopped he would talk to her before running.
~~~

Heck she would have even preferred a screaming match like Harry and Mal. Or a one sided talking to filled with tears like Jazzy and Gil, not to be forgotten like nothing, not even Ella was that Cruel.

She had just slammed her door closed on the boat when Harry walked up with a letter for her on his hook, she snatched it away as she immediately recognizing the scratchy cursive anywhere *Uma Cecelia Pirates bay.*

She ran back into her room to read it, the letter wasn't long. It was a quick rundown of what had happened. He apologized for Leaving her and promised her they would be back soon;

'I said it before and I'll say it again, I'm never gonna leave you behind. This was a last minute thing and you know how arguing with Ella would go, my sister isn't one to be told no.

As Ella had no a doubt let you know our relationship, If you can even call it that, was doomed from the start, I am to be with Mal, But that doesn't mean I have to like it, My heart is in your hands Uma you hold the Key and you can do whatever you want with it.

I was told that once you are all free I would be allowed to keep 'toys' as she called them basically it means me and Mal co-rule but we don't have to be in a romantic relationship Uma you are not a toy you are no play thing to me. I don't want you juts so i can throw you away when i grow board, I will never grow board or throw you to the side. Uma my castle doors will always be open to you and I'll give you anything your heart desires. Just because you can not be my Queen does not mean I will not be your King.

Ryder Gothel- Westergaard (Your shadow)'

Your shadow, '*My Shadow'* her own Voice ran off in her head That was her pet name for him when he would follow her around at first it was out of pure annoyance then a term of endearment said with not crazed insane love but passionate heartfelt feelings. Truthfully if Carlos wanted to look up to Ryder had never asked his mother for advice so he was able to love Uma beyond the furry of a villain and in the rawest from of young love worthy of the fairytales. Yes they were young but it was the best it was going to get for them. They

had no future, no hope, no salvation, at least that what they though.

She shook the envelope out into her hand and out fell a silver key necklace with a sapphire at the top. Now Uma wasn't a sensitive person, Not by a long shot but her lov- fondness for Ryder out-weighed her Pride and while she hated the thought of being a play thing his sentiment behind his words sung in her head like a symphony. It was like how the water called to Moana and, no matter how much she hated to admit it, How the land Sung to Ariel. She Clipped the necklace on and dropped it under her shirt, then stuffed the letter away in her drawer and walked out on Deck, now with Aaron gone she could finally call the shots again around her ship, even if his absence hurt his brother and sisters.

And there you have it a nice long chapter for the last Update till I end up back in school.
The book wont be on hold I just have to get into a groove and there might be messy off schedule updates till I get into that groove I wont be gone for long I promise.

I know Jay and Ella give off a Harley and Joker vibe at the moment and while that wasn't my intention it make sense for the story, I'm gradually hope I can give them a Morticia and Gomez Feel that I have created for Uma and Ryder
~DarkVixen

Chapter Nine

Ella was the Queen of a lot of things and one was being able to mark her manipulation in someone so deep that she didn't even have to be in front of them to think of her. So when Ben asked Mal out just as Ryder predicted Mal's mind Immediately flew to her and she went looking for her. it was only as an after though that she thought of Evie.

Evie skipped over to Doug, Ella, and Aaron in the courtyard just as she saw Carlos and Jazzy wave goodbye. Carlos' arm around her waist as he was unable to reach her shoulders, Especially with her heels on, without looking awkward. She had Chemistry with Doug and had told the others how he stopped her from getting expelled. placed her test in front of Doug's face. "For the first time it's more than just a pretty face."

"A shocker, huh?"

"You were really great in there."

"So were you." Aaron raised an eyebrow and tapped his black painted nails on the table Evie got the message and crossed the table to sit with Aaron making Doug look like a kicked puppy.

Evie shook her head, "Not as good as you, Thank you so much for helping me," Evie gave a soft smile focusing on the now trying to keep her feelings at bay. There was no gain with Doug so what was even the point. Her Mother had told her to look for a prince and that was Aaron. he would give her everything her mother said she deserved. "I bet I can get an A on the next test without the mirror."

"Yeah. Well, maybe we can get together and We'll hang out..."

"Yeah, let's get together." Aaron squeezed the part of her arm that he was holding under the table, not even changing his face. Ella said nothing, "I mean I'll see if i have time for us to study together."

"Ryder owes me Twenty bucks." Aaron grumbled.

They heard hurried footsteps approach, "There you are" Mal said walking up. "I have been looking literally everywhere for you two and Jazzy."

"What's wrong?" Ella and Evie asked at the same time.

"Ben just asked me on a date." she whispered the last part as if saying out loud would cause mass panic.

"Nice" Doug said while Aaron gave her a thumbs up.

Evie Squealed, "We can handle this. Bye." She waved at Doug and Aaron.

Aaron Just sat with a harsh glare in Doug's direction as if he was threatening to tear out his soul

Mal and Evie's dorm

Ella was doing Mal's hair and Evie was doing her make-up, and Jazzy was doing her Nails. "Okay. Easy on the blush. I don't want to scare him away. Not that I could."

"Definitely not. He's bending over backwards." Ella smirked. "Everything will fall into place."

"Yeah and trust us we'll make it work, we always do," a shadow whispered in her ear and she snapped her fingers, a belt floated through the window and dropped onto her lap. "I already started my dolls." She pointed to one in a blue suit, "And Ben is done, a little gateway magic if anything," She giggled.

"lets hold of on Voodooing him yet I'm not sure how the curse will react to voodoo magic I need to do some research" Ella laughed.

Evie giggled with her, "Anyway Please. My mom taught me how to apply blush before I could talk. Always use upward strokes."

"And my mom was teaching me to do hair before I could walk." She raised a perfectly Manicured eyebrow realizing the fact that Mal's

hair was cut short in the back and longer in the front on purpose for the first time.

"My mom was never big on make-up tips and..." She chose her words very carefully "I never had to do this before. Harry didn't really care, we pretty much just looted together." She said as Evie started to dab lip gloss on and Jazzy started to blow on her nails.

Ella nodded, noticing how she watched her words, 'good she will need that for when she becomes queen.'

"We're gonna need all the family we can get if we don't pull this off my mothers not a barrel of laughs when she doesn't get her way, just ask Snow white."

"Are you afraid of her?"

Evie put down the make-up and sighed, "Sometime, are you afraid of your mom.

"I just really want her to be proud of me. She gets so angry with me when I disappoint her. And sh... yeah, she's my mom, so I know she loves me... In her own way."

A scoff was heard, they both turned to Ella and Jazzy, "Your mother's never getting off the Isle Mal." Jazzy Sneer, "neither of your mothers will, they will be imprisoned forever."

"When you said that. I didn't think you meant our Parents too." Evie said, whipping around.

"Oh Evie honey we mean all of them, except for maybe a select few, Faciliar, Turmain, Smee. Honestly they failed and are heartless. What good are they?" Ella brushed it off. "They had besides They'll just try to take your hard earned thrones." She said with a dramatic pout. Evie and Mal looked down eyes wide breathing heavy not sure how to react to this news. "Oh girls don't worry." Ella smiled sweetly taking their hands, "They wont get off they had twenty years to and sent children to do it for them they stuck they can't get you here."

Jazzy decided to lighten the subject, "Moving on. Come see." She

placed the nail polish down on the bed.

"We done?" Mal's Attention was diverted.

"Yea" Jazzy said bringing her to the mirror

"Wow" Mal Breathed.

"We know," Evie smiled.

"I look"

"Say it," Ella urged.

"Not hideous"

All three of them shook their heads, "Not even close." That's one thing going for them, they may not love their partners correctly, They may not have been loved by their parents, They may have not understood their emotions. They truly cared and loved each other. This was something Ella frowned upon she hated that's he cared for them. She hoped that she never had to dispose of them, because she with these emotions, these retched vile emotions, if that day came, she wasn't sure how she would handle it.

There was a knock on the door, and Evie answered it, Ben stood there in a daze. "For the first time, I understand the difference between pretty and beautiful." He stared at her in Awe. "I hope you like bikes."

Ella Grabbed her jacket and walked out of the room after Mal was gone, Ryder met with her falling into identical steps, both dressed a like Ella cad in red leather pants a white leather jacket that felt a little over midway down her thighs and Black boot and Ryder inverted with a coat that reached his knees "where are they going?" Ella asked not even looking at him.

He nodded, "The enchanted Lake," He answered the same way keeping his stare straight ahead. "Ben asked where the best place for Mal would be, he really thinks I'm still little Ryder Fitzherbert from Auradon." he made his voice high and squeaky at the end.

"And in a gazebo on the lake where Mal has no quick escape is the perfect place to get to her, Good thinking baby brother."

The siblings stayed hidden in the background with Ryders shadows until Ben decided to go for a swim, The they broke off Ella heading towards Ben and Ryder Heading towards Mal.

Mal was having a tantrum song about not knowing what to do and as she turned on one of the pliers Ryder was standing right there scaring the life out of her, "Ryder!" she grabbed her chest. "Were you stalking me."

"No, Ben talked to me about this. He still thinks we're friends." He lied swiftly, "And I just came to see where your loyalties lie. Clearly we were wrong about you. I'll just go tell Ella." He started walking away with his hands in his pockets.

The purple haired fey reached out a hand and grabbed his arm, "No Ryder!" he stopped and side glanced back over his shoulder, "I want everything you promised I want to be better then my mother," she pulled him around so he was facing her and she was leaning on his chest, "I want you." she cringed at hos needy and desperate she sounded.

Ryder wrapped and arm around his Queen, he took her chin in his hand tightly, Pulling her face up to look at him. "then act like it, Stop singing about that little prince, he will be nobody soon."

"It's not about him, It's about Auradon and The four kingdoms as a whole."

"Oh don't worry about that, my fairy. We will not destroy Auradon as a beautiful land, we will just make it more fun, more inclusive, you can still have all the wonderful joys of life here. And Ella has decided that if you behave you will get your mothers staff as a reward." She looked up in hope and Ryder just smiled. "Just stick to the scripted My fairy." He kissed her palm and whisked away his long coat, swishing along with him as if an extension of himself. He disappeared silently into the foliage.

~~~
~~~

Ella sat on a Swing that was near the end of The Lake where Ben was swimming, "Ella?" He asked getting out of the lake. She looked back and saw the sparkly remains of a spell drifting off in the river, 'Not good.'

"Hey I was wandering around and came upon this swing, I needed to think."

"About?"

"Everything, I'm supposed to be from here but I don't remember a thing."

Ben sat down on the swing next to her, her siren-like voice drawing him in, "Maybe that's a good thing, you'd remember the horrible things my parents did to you and you would Judge all of Auradon Based on that."

"Maybe you're right... aren't you on a date?" She raised an eyebrow.

"Oh yea but um," He sighed, "I went for a swim and I felt a spell get lifted, I think Mal cursed me with that cookie."

Ella lifted a fake shocked hand to her mouth, "Oh no she really did it."

"Huh? You knew."

She nodded solemnly, "I didn't think she'd actually do it. Mal had a big crush on you, she had dreams of you before coming here, though it meant something. She mentioned that since you were with Audrey she would have to curse you but we didn't think she would actually go through with it. I guess she saw no other way, there's no real affection of any kind on the isle so just to get some kind of it we can go to crazy lengths. Carlos hangs off Jazzy, Jay retreats to me I have to be there for my baby brother you get it."

She just gave Ben a lot to unpack, "What should I do?"

She pretended to think, "Give her a chance, Mal can be good," she almost gagged on the words, "she just needs to see it and between her and Audrey, I'm sorry but I think she's the lesser of two evils.

It's clearly all about status for Audrey." she saw Ryder in the shadows and nodded slightly.

"Yeah, Your right Mal deserves a chance, thanks Ella."

She nodded, "Anytime really." he dove back in the lake and swam towards Mal. Ella and Ryder continued watching the date.

"Mal... I told you that I loved you. What about you? Do you love me?"

She looked down 'sadly', "I don't know what love feels like. Not like that after all."

"Maybe I can teach you." he said, tilting her head towards him. To him her look was of shocked hope to Ella and Ryder it was fake admiration they knew when she was faking something and her real feelings, she wanted him away from her. She wanted Ryder.

Good everything was still on track, The siblings smirked and fist bumbled before retreating back to Auradon prep.

The two may have thought that Mal wanted him away but in reality she was falling for the prince and the though to leaving him behind was killing her. The though of giving him up for a boy clearly in love with someone else, never getting her true love or happily ever after, being used for image and status was eating away at her.

She looked in his sparkling hazel-green eyes and suddenly she didn't want all the powers of hell, she didn't want people bowing to her. She didn't give a damn if her mom was proud of her or if Ella respected her. She just wanted him she didn't want her crown or throne that didn't matter anymore, He did. But with eyes watching her from all angles Dangerous eyes that could curse her drown her kill her drag her to the other side, what was she to do. She had no escape as Ella always said, Love is out most vulnerable and dangerous weakness Mal never understood my she said this so much. She had though she was reminding her self. Now she under stood it wasn't a reminder she was telling them, threatening them, it was a warning.

I had a little time to Upload hope you enjoyed This is one of the few messy uploads that will happen due to school starting back up,
~DarkVixen

Chapter Ten

The eight were in remedial goodness class. Jazzy was writing random things not even paying attention to life anymore, Ryder was playing with the strings of his sweater, a nervous tick Carlos knew all too well, he took a chance and grabbed his hands under the table and held the boy's hand which he gratefully accepted. They may not like each other anymore but they could still comfort one another. Aaron looked spaced out like he was thinking about his place in the universe, and Ella was drawing again, this time it was an image of Dragon eye and the wand put together tugging on her slightly faded black hair it was barley noticeable. Fairy godmother called their attention to the front of the room, starling Aaron out of his existential crisis, "Children, excuse me. Um, as you know, uh, this Sunday is family day here at Auradon Prep. And because your parents and foster parents can't be here due to, uh, distance, we've arranged for a special treat." Carlos paled and tightened his hold on Ryder, who placed his other hand on his shoulder.

She turned on a T.V. and they saw Mother Gothel, Hans, Dr Facilair, Captain Hook, Cruella, Jafar, Evil Queen, Maleficent. The royal Fours parents looked increasingly annoyed with the other four. "I don't see anything, nor do I hear." Maleficent complained. "Kids, Kids, Kids." Fairy godmother coxed forward.

They slowly moved forward assessing the situation at hand , "You the remote!" Facilair shouted at Maleficent, or one of the other core fours parents clearly she had ticked him off prior to now. He was the only one brave enough to challenge her not being scared of her magic. She may have had the powers of hell but he had the powers of the people of hell.

she grabbed it from him with a glare, "Is this thing on? Ugh, It's broken. Ugh! I hate electronic equip..." Hook snatched it back and hit one button turning it on.

"Evie, It's mommy. Oh! Look how beautiful." Evie waved back "Oh,

you know what they say, the poison apple doesn't fall far from the tree."

Maleficent Scoffed, "Don't you mean the weeds?" Evie pouted so Aaron held her hand discreetly.

"Oh Ella my flower Ryder Honey you look wonderful," Gothel Praised. Ryder turned his head into Carlos and rolled his eyes, always with the looks.

Cruella stuck her head in frame, "Ooh! Who's the old bat?"

Mal was the one to answer her, "This is fairy godmother."

"Still doing tricks with eggplants" Maleficent laughed.

She was clearly offended."I turned a pumpkin into a beautiful carriage" she said indignantly.

"You really couldn't give Cinderella till one A.M.? I mean, really. What, the hamsters had to be back on their little wheels? -" Maleficent was showing that even with her powers snuffed out she could still vex the living hell out of everyone. Hans was sitting back enjoying the chaos and Facilair wanted to hit the other fairy, Power was not something to be made fun of.

"They were mice! They were not... they were mice. They were not... "

Mal grabbed her hand, "Thank you so much" she said ending the argument.

"They were mice," Fairy Godmother whispered to get the last word then walked away.

"Hi mom" Mal greats

She shouted, "Mal! I m-m-miss you" Hook just had to smack it out of her.

"You children are never far from our thoughts,"

"How's my Sorceress?" Jazzy looked up with a twisted Smile

"I'm good daddy." She smiled, running a hand over the doll in her pocket that was increasingly visible to Facilier as Adam, "Making sure I get my cut."

He smiled, "Good."

Hook looked at his son assessing him and nodded, He was never close with hook He cared more about his siblings then his father.

Maleficent broke up the father daughter duo and asked her daughter, "How long must mommy wait to see you?"

Mal made it look like she was wondering, she glanced at Ella who gave her a warning look "Um, there's a big coronation coming up. I think sometime probably after... that."

"When?!" She demanded from all eight as if she had some kind of power.

Evie, Jay and Carlos flinched making the royal four glare. Maleficent didn't scare them especially now that they had power and she didn't. Mal answered, "Friday, 10 A.M." With wide eyes as if telling her mom to cool it.

"You sure I can't see you before that? I don't know what I'll do If I don't get my hands on that magic wan..." Evil Queen nudged her "you... you little nugget that I love so much." Mal shuttered knowing her mother would never touch the wand if Ella's plan worked and her plans alway worked.

"Yes, I completely understand, mother."

Cruella changed the subject by sticking her head in and asking, "Carlos is that a dog? Oh, yes, yes, baby, I do understand. It would make the perfect size for earmuffs."

Carlos glared his fist basically crushing Ryder's finger and though he didn't react he was sure a few were broken. "He's the perfect size for a pet. This dog loves me, and I love him. And fyi, your dog is stuffed!"

Cruella was shocked by Carlos standing up for himself, "Oh!" She gasped in surprise. Then realized Ryder was smiling. Ella stomped on his foot, It was not good if Carlos could stand up for himself he had to be kept down. She gave a subtle nod to Jazzy who nodded, pulling him out of Ryder's grasp and holding him.

"So give it a rest!"

Jafar laughed, "Oh-ho Burn."

"Oh! Why don't you go sell a toaster, you two-bit salesman!" Cruella said, annoyed.

"People who talk to stuffed animals shouldn't throw stones."

"Oh, well, people who sell toasters shouldn't use mixed metaphors."

"Enough!" Hans yelled.

"Jay shut it off." Ella said blank faced. He did as asked, placing his arm around her.

Fairy godmother looked at them guilty; she didn't think their parents would be that bad, Mal was so stiff, a few of them didn't even talk to their kids. The Queen and Gothel only cared about how Evie, Ella and Ryder looked and Carlos got into it with his mother. "I'm so sorry." She apologized.

"Thanks for the special treat." Jay said knowing she meant no harm.

"Of course," she said as they walked away. "There are a few more things For Ella, Ryder, Jazzy and Aaron."

The Royal four looked at the Vk's, "It's okay head out. We'll catch up." Ryder nodded to Mal.

"M, What do you think our parents are gonna do to us? If we don't pull this off?" Evie asked in fear as they walked out.

"I think they will be quietly disappointed in us, but ultimately... Proud of us for doing our best." Mal said

"Really" Carlos asked in hope.

She shook her head, "No, I think we are definitely goners." She told three of the four.

"Yea" Evie added.

"But it's not them we have to worry about." Jay added He looked back at his girl friend who smiled softly, "It's them." There was something about her smile though if felt warm and loving it wasn't like the crazed love one she usually wore. it was sweet and sincere she had never looked at them like that not even while they had been in Auradon, it was like there was some slumbering princess getting ready to wake up but not quite there yet.

~~~

Ella Looked up at the woman dressed in blue who she only cared about because of her power, "Your Brother's and sister's want to speak to you." While Jazzy and Aaron looked thrilled, Ella and Ryder stiffened.

The two had never told anyone what their relationship with Ginny was like, "Um we don't have any siblings." Ryder said.

"What about Ginny?" Aaron asked only to get a wide smile from Ella.

So they sat in front of another screen with six other teens behind the screen: five girls and only one boy, Harriet, Harry, CJ, Freddie, Celia and Ginny. "Aaron!" CJ bounced With a gleaming smile.

"Hey CJ!" Aaron Smiled back at her

"What about us eh?" Harriet whined.

He laughed, "Hey Harry." He purposely ignored their sister who made an indignant sound making both her brothers laugh at her.

"Jazzy!" Celia drew out, "I miss you."

"I miss you too Cel, Both of you so much."
~~~

"Are we gonna See you again?" Freddie asked.

"I'm sure you will." Ella smiled. Every kid on the isle knew Ella was planning on freeing them and it drew closer and closer to that day.

"No one asked you know it all." Ginny Sneered, Ella glared back.

Ryder was now fuming, "No one asked you to but in."

Fairy godmother winced, that's not good. "Yeah well no one asked you to invade my home 12 years ago."

"No one told your mom to take us in!" Ella shouted.

"No one asked you both to be a mistake, Look at you too bad for Auradon to good for the Isle you're just wrong inside and out!" Ella let out a strangled scream and Ginny did the same both stomping away, Ryder right behind his sister.

"Did any of you know it was that bad?" Harry asked, He knew Ginny. They were kinda companions but didn't really run in the same circles. He didn't know she hated her Brother and sister so much.

The Vk's watched as Ella and Ryder stormed past with no warning the grass under their feet dying "We go near that we die." Evie winced, "and I can't calm them if I'm not looking at them."

"I'll get you through." Jazzy said running up, "I gotta do this quickly cause I wanna finish my call."

Jazzy, Mal, Evie and Jay rushed to the very edge of there their magic was starting to kill everything Jazzy lifted her and Evie up and Jay and Mal started stepping back waiting for the decay in receded, It was hard to wave though the thickening Air and it was really heavy for Jazzy to not only hold Evie but dessen the air so she could sit in it. Evie sat criss-crossed and held her fist out, weaving her hands though the different threads of emotions, Yanking on Good ones and cutting off bad ones.

Evie could feel the others Emotions on the isle but he couldn't see or sift through them, Ella hated When Evie felt her emotions and

she never knew why, Now that she had a clear vision she understood. Everyone's emotions, At least the ones she has seen in Auradon, were kept in a big Glass room like a greenhouse easy to get to with the door wide open letting different threads fly out, they were like colored ribbons hanging down and easily distinguable and separable. Everyone had every emotion even Mal had a sadness ribbon and Carlos had an Anger one. Ella's were locked up in a vault that she had to jump over a Kassam to get to, the ribbons were in tangles she could barely separate them, they were jagged and ripped and it was a pain to even pull on what she let be visible. Even Ryders weren't as bad, yes they were torn and jagged but she could grip and pull them, easily and while his were locked up there was no Kassam and a crack under the door.

When Evie came two Ella was glaring at her as Ryder sang the healing incantation, Evie was scared she was in trouble, "Lucky for you I'm too tired to ream you out for going through my head." She huffed and Muttered the same incantation as her brother, Jazzy and Evie Touched down and Mal and Jay came barreling through.

The Voodoo Queen left to Carlos who was all alone with his thoughts at the moment which wasn't good for anyone, But Evie stared at the broken girl. There was a thread in her head that was easily to get to it was the very first one you saw when you managed to open the door and so much longer then the others, it was a pale pink one it was the color of true love and not so coincidentally that was Jay's easiest and longest Thread as well.

She failed to notice that Ella and Ryders emotions galleries were covering and a faint white glow, and if she did notice she would have thought it had to do with their broken emotions but even so even in the broken VK's heads there was no glow. there was something else at play something that was so sinister that it almost felt safe and that was the the most dangerous thing there was. it was war disguised, wrapped in a blanket of peace.

I am supposed to be writing an essay right now (Its not going well) but I felt bad for not writing for you all in a while school has eaten up a lot of my time so here is my unofficial return to this story i have an ending planned in my head and you guys are not ready you might just hate the royals after this (this falls

in line with my own ideologies that most if not all government is corrupt and will do anything to make sure they look like the good guys. If gen z could rule the world we would do a million time better then the people in office right now.) so buckle up because the world will spiral out of control soon .
~DarkVixen

Chapter Eleven

A nice long Chapter for you all

~~~

Ella woke up and chose Violence, All this cheery happiness created by familial was slowly driving her mad. Evie, who had now gained access to her emotions, took hold of her threads keeping her in place taking as much advantage of the love thread as much she could. If she didn't there was a very good chance she would have lashed out at someone, In a very unprincessy, Unbecoming manner. So the whole day Ella was very calm and gentle with Jay something that had grown Rare in their time in Auradon.

But when they walked down stairs to the courtyard even Evie couldn't contain her disgust at Ben's Rendition of be our guest. It seemed these auradonians couldn't do anything but copy their parents.

Ben

Ma cherie Mademoiselle,
It is with deepest pride and greatest pleasure
That we welcome you tonight.
And now, we invite you to relax,
Let us pull up a chair
As the dining room proudly presents -
Your dinner!

All

♫ Be... our... guest! ♫
♫ Be our guest! ♫
♫ Put our service to the test ♫
♫ Tie your napkin 'round your neck, cherie ♫
♫ And we'll provide the rest ♫
~~~

♫ Soup du jour ♫
♫ Hot hors d'oeuvres ♫
♫ Why, we only live to serve ♫

♫ Try the grey stuff ♫
♫ It's delicious! ♫
♫ Don't believe me? ♫
♫ Ask the dishes ♫

♫ They can sing! ♫
♫ They can dance! ♫
♫ After all, Miss, this is France! ♫
♫ And the dinner here is never second best! ♫

♫ Go on, unfold your menu ♫
♫ Take a glance and then you'll ♫

♫ Be our guest ♫
♫ Oui, our guest ♫
♫ Be our guest! ♫

♫ We tell jokes, ♫
♫ I do tricks! ♫
♫ With my fellow candlesticks ♫

♫ And it's all in perfect taste ♫
♫ That you can bet ♫
♫ Come on and lift your glass ♫
♫ You've won your own free pass ♫

♫ To be our guest ♫
♫ If you're stressed ♫
♫ It's fine dining we suggest! ♫

♫ Be our guest! ♫
♫ Be our guest! ♫
♫ Be our guest! ♫

All the parents clapped, Ella had her head in Jay's chest covering her ears making more than a few queens and kings look at her funny. Ben made his way towards his parents. "Oh... That was so

lovely!" Belle embraces them.

"Just here" Adam said, leading his wife, child and the other family up to a photographer.

"Ready?" The man asked.

They nodded, then Ben stopped them, "By the way I have a new girlfriend."

"Well, I never wanted to say anything, but I always thought that Audrey was a little self-absorbed. A fake smile, kind of a kiss-up." Belle muttered, smiling for the camera.

"Do we know your new girlfriend?" Adam asked.

"On the count of three, One two..."

Ben held his hand out. "Sorta Mal." Mal hugged Evie and tried to make her way over but The royal four wouldn't allow it. Ella beckoned the others by curling a single finger once and walked forward while keeping a distance so Ben could introduce her. Jazzy pulled Carlos away from the chocolate fountain and made him whip his face, Jay on the other had just heard Ella snap and walked towards her looking stoic once again.

The man then said "Three" and snapped a picture with Ben smiling but Belle and Adam looked shocked.

Mal ran over giving the illusion of dedication, Mal knew how to Play Princess, "This is Mal. From the island." Ben told His parents together.

"Mm..." Belle hummed wanting to support her child but still worried. And it was even worse as the children they banished were so close and were her friends.

"My Girlfriend," Ben added, holding Mal's hand.

"Hi," Belle said as she shook her Hand.

"Hi," Mal said in a surgery-sweet voice.

"Perhaps she could join us for lunch" Ben said, looking every bit the King that he was born to be. 'Not for long' Ella thought to herself. She found herself analyzing Mal's stance and Tone smiling in satisfaction.

"Of... course. Any friend of Ben's... " Beast tired.

"Um, I actually came with my friends." Mal Said pointing behind her at the royal four and the rest of The Vk's

"Well, you should invite them. Because the more the merrier!"

Mal Smiled again feeling a little better but Ben stopped her, "I um actually invited their Parents and Siblings to meet them so they might be a little too busy."

"What!?" Adam Snapped.

"Dad it's Family day, They should meet their families."

Mal decided to speak loud enough so that they could hear her, "Um actually that would probably be great especially for Ryder and Ella after the 'special Treat' Fairy godmother gave us."

"What happened with that?" Ben asked.

"Long story short, never mention Ginny Gothel to Ryder and Ella."

Adam and Belle could only assume this was all bad so they redirected the conversation "Uh, how about a game of croquet before lunch?" Adam asked, calmer than his wife.

"Huh? Of course." Mal said even though she was confused.

"Game one" Beast and Ben said.

~~~

Ben was teaching Ryder and Jay how to play. Evie was Speaking with Belle and Beast, Aaron And Carlos were playing with Dude, and Ella, Jazzy and Mal were talking while playing.
~~~

Then there was a series of gasps, the eight looked over and realized why, Jasmine and Aladain were walking up with Aziz at their side. Behind them was Eric and Ariel with Melody and last were the ones that got people to gasp, Rapunzel and Eugene out of the castle.

Ella looked at her Birth parents, She was, underwhelmed, to say the least. The Stories of Rapunzel 70 foot glowing long blond locks was a distant memory, a story, she now lived with a messy short brunette boy cut. Her eyes weren't wide and excited; they were dull and broken. Eugene's confident smirk was wiped from his face, replaced with the cool blank demeanor, one to rival even hades at the height of his power, his eyes still gleamed but they weren't with Mischief and love they were with heartbreak and anger they almost seemed Murderous upon seeing Adam.

After the initial shock Adams face turned red, "What are you doing here, we had a deal." He knew Ben invited them but he didn't think they would actually show up.

Rapunzel scoffed, "there was no deal we banished you for hurting our families and you banished us out of spite." There was venom in her voice; she was no longer the naïve little princess she was when she left her tower.

"We were invited, Adam, your son said he had a 'surprise' for us." Jasmine Said hugging herself.

Ben stepped forward, "Ella, Ryder, Jazzy, Aaron." Ben Beckoned them forward. The Vk's literally dropped what they were doing and ran to their respective royals sides. The other three Royals looked to Ella, she looked the six parents and two siblings up and down with critical eyes.

Upon hearing their kids/ siblings names and seeing them in the flesh for the first time in 12 years They all let out a gasp, They all let tears come to their eyes. It was quite a surprise that when Ben Beckoned them forward they stayed rooted to the ground and four other isle kids rushed around to their sides. And all of them looked at the blond who could only be Ella Fizherbert.

They didn't look like the pretty princesses and princesses who were

stolen from their beds all those years ago. Their eyes were dull or alight with anger, their perfect silks and satins traded in for patchy throw together leather that was either too loose or too tight. Ella's rosy cheeks were now stalk white, it looked as if she had never smiled properly. Ryder's perfect smile, almost too perfect for someone so young, was replaced with a scowl and skeptical eyes. Aarons eyes lit up with some sort of insane look of hidden fear, his hair a crazy mess. Jazzy's skin that should have been Golden brown was pale, as pale as she could get, like she hadn't seen the sun in ages her eyes wide and untrusting.

Ella looked at each of them with critical and scrutinizing eyes, she looked unfazed and unamused. She held a hand up and stepped forward to Ben, the hand signaling the rest to stay where they were, even the boy that ran to her side. "Who are these people?" She asked in a low whisper, Of course she knew exactly who they were but she wanted to gauge their reaction.

Rapunzel, Ariel and Aladdin burst into tears, Rapunzel letting full on sobs wracked her body, Eugene looked about ready to Punch something or someone, Jasmine was cursing in another language under her breath something so vulgar that it made Jay and Jazzy reel back and almost laugh and Eric was in a stunned silence a fire dancing in his eyes.

"Ella, Ryder, Jazzy, Aaron These are your parents and Jazzy and Aaron's brother and sister."

"Our parents are back on the isle Ben," Ryder snapped.

"So are our siblings." Aaron added.

Ella's lips tightened into a thin line, her eyes flared gold and she violently thrusted up her hand and closed it into a fist. Immediately the two boys shut up. Ignoring the obvious display of power Ella just put on, Ben Continued, "No the parents you were taken from I figured you can all split up with your parents and have some one on one time for lunch."

Ella laughed a laugh so insane so broken Eugene and Rapunzel fear for their baby girls sanity or rather what remained of her sanity.

She turned on a Heel and stalked off towards her boyfriend, "Thanks but no we don't do 'one-on-one'" she allowed Jay to wrap his arms around her waist and bend his head down to rest his forehead on the top of her hair "We know a power play when we see it." she said, running a hand up her boyfriend's arm.

"Would it be better if we could set up a table for all of you?"

Ella thought for a moment and then beckoned all her friends over, they huddled and talked in hushed voices knowing everyone was listening. She turned back around and nodded, "sure we can do that." her best attempt at a peasant smile on her face but everyone could tell it was forced by the way her lip was twitching.

So later one the four kids sat one side of the table close together while their 'parents' Aziz and Melody sat on the other. No one said anything for a long while. Aziz reached into his pocket and pulled out a small box and handed it over to Jazzy. She backed up so he set it on the table and pushed it towards her. She looked to Ella who after staring at it for a second nodded. She opened it to find a bunch of patches for her jacket, "thanks but I don't know what a lot of this stuff is."

"We don't have Wifi or TV on the isle." Ryder said

"You don't?" Melody asked, pain lacing her voice.

Ella shook her head, "No it's all ridiculous Good Guy Propaganda." she crossed her legs and leaned back, "Be good because it's good for you." She said in a pained stale voice.

"Be right just like us." Aaron said in the same voice plucking off his hat to reveal the red hairs that he shook out. He pulled one down and looked at it, "CJ needs to touch this up."

"If you ever see her again."

"Whose CJ?" Eric asked.

"My sister, I got two, a younger and an older and an older brother." Melody looked Hurt, "Hook Took me in after they abandoned us."

Eugene looked startled, "Abandoned?"

They all looked to Ella who groaned and rolled her head back, "12 years ago they stole us out of our beds at night, threw us all into an armored car, drove us to the heart of the isle, dropped us in the middle of the street and drove off. We stayed on the streets for a week before we were picked up." she picked her head back up.

"Who took you all in?" Aladdin asked Fear and worry lacing his voice,

"Allow us to properly introduce ourselves." Aaron smiled a sinister smile, it reminded them of Harry when he was out for blood, "Aaron Hook nice to meetcha." his eyes glowed dangerously.

"Jazzy Faciliar at your service." The girl said flipping her tarot cards between her hands knowing a voodoo doll shouldn't be shown on the first meeting. "I have two sisters" Aziz frowned.

"Ryder Gothel- Westergaard" he said with no emotion both of his parents sucked in a breath. "We don't talk about Ginny."

"Ella Gothel- Westergaard" All four of their eyes glowed then Dimmed, "She calls me Flower, just like you Probably thinks I'll help her off the isle too."

Rapunzel has a moment of panic, "You won't, right?"

Jazzy scoffs, "ha no The idea is to chain all the villains down and let their kids run free effectively closing away the people that did commit crimes.

"Idea?" Ariel leaned forward interested.

They smiled and their eyes glowed, "We want to change this up." Ryder smiles gesturing to the landscape around them, "as long as a Beast is on the throne Adam has power, and he's a terrible ruler."

"The Isle was a nightmare and he put us all through Hell. The Isle is cold, dark, broken, and trash." Jazzy shook her head "I'm pretty sure there are only sharks in the bay."

"There are, I saw them shred up Harry's coat once." Aaron said thinking back. He shook his head and built off Jazzy, "there are no trees and the air is hard to breathe."

"Everyone is always Angry, Love is weak and frowned up on." Ryder added tugging at the strand of hair.

"Oh please." Ella huffed, "You're not in love. She's an infatuation, You'll be over her soon." She threw her legs over the side of her chair. They were still crossed but not she was sideways leaning back effectively cracking her back.

Ryder crossed his arms and turned away, "What's that about?" Eugene asked.

"Just Ryders Toy."

"Uma's not a toy Ella,"

"No, she's just an interference. Mal is your other half," She growled, "Don't forget it."

Aaron spoke up so that the parents and siblings could catch up, "we all have another half whether romantically or Platonically." he glanced at Ryder, "that helps up reach full potential a VK to our AK. Mine is Evie, Evil Queen's daughter." he nodded at the blue haired girl who was trying blueberries for the first time politely declining an apple.

"Who's yours?" Aladdin asked his daughter.

"Carlos De vil." She pointed to the boy who was petting dude while sitting crisscrossed on the ground with a piece of chocolate hanging out his mouth.

"Mine is supposed to be Mal. Maleficent's daughter " they all looked to the Purple haired fairy who was laughing with Ben. They didn't understand how she was supposedly as evil as her mother. She looked like a normal teenage girl a little rebellious but so what.

"And Mine is Jafar's son Jay." Jasmine froze, Aladdin Hugging her close "the one who was hugging me earlier." She raised her hand

and snapped, Jay's eyes immediately diverted from his food and Evie to his girlfriend. Without a word he stood and walked over to her. It was like he had a built in senor for when she wanted him. "Love, say hello to these Wonderful people."

Jay greeted each of them standing stoically, 'like a king' Ella smiled. "Babe your projection works here right?" He nodded, "Can you show them a projection of the Isle please?"

Jay held out his hand and the parents saw where their daughters and Sons spent the last 12 years. They gasp, Rapunzel and Jasmine hand to hold down their husbands so they wouldn't go storming over to Adam, "We have a plan." Ryder smirks.

They leaned in, "we don't plan on releasing the actual villains, That's messed up but we do plan on releasing their kids and maybe a select few villains who have learned their lesson ya know, Facilair, Smee, madam Mim. but doing that involves taking Ben's place."

"Really dropping Ben, but he's a good kid working on change." Ariel said solomfully.

"We've seen it all before." Jay Growled, "A preach of change only to do the bare minimum." he scoffed, "he'll bring us over bask in the glory and leave everyone else to rot."

"It always happens, like Ryder said, as long as a beast is on the throne Adam has power, and he was a terrible ruler." Aaron said tugging at his coat sleeve. "But um it would also involve taking the reins of the four kingdoms, establishing peace, trade, proper divisions, Equal control, and blurred borderlines." Ella dismissed her boyfriend.

"They're right about Adam," Aziz added.

They all shared a look, "Well" Eugene smiled, "Sometimes you have to leave it to the kids."

All four shared a concealed smirk.

They shared a pleasant conversation after that Melody was telling

some story and showing Aaron the Shells she made for him. But Before anything else could be said there was a loud shout "You!" Mal jumped back surprised. "How are you here? And how have you stayed so young?" and an older lady who was next to Audrey. It didn't take the four long to realize what was happening and who it was. Ryder was At Mal's side in a second the others close behind.

Everyone stopped and started crowding. "Queen Leah, It's okay. Maleficent is still on the island. This is her daughter, Mal. Don't you remember my proclamation to give the new generation a chance?" Ben said, coming up and holding Mal.

"A chance to what, Ben? Destroy us? Come on. You remember, don't you? The poison apples. And the spells. Spells. My daughter... Was raised by fairies because of your mother's curse. So her first words, her first steps, I missed it all! You mustn't trust her."

Mal tried to apologize for her mothers deeds, "I'm so so..."

"Go away! Stay away from her!" Chad said.

"Come on Chad" Ryder said, his eyes Glowing gold like his sisters. Jazzy's eyes started to glow blue, Aarons returned to their sea green color. He tried to Appeal to him with the fact that he was technically an AK

"What? They were raised by their parents, Ryder. What do you think villains teach their kids? Huh? Kindness? Fair play? No way, okay? Uh-uh." He looked at Mal. "You stole another girl's boyfriend."

"Hey, Hey" Ben stood in front of her.

He moved to Jay "Oh. You enjoy hurting people." He looked hurt by the words. "And you, you're nothing but a gold digger and a cheater." He said to Evie, Doug hadn't stepped into protect her Making her realize that Aaron was probably right, It wasn't with it none of them where.

"Mirror, mirror, in my hand, who's the biggest jerk in the land?" Evie stuck out her mirror to show Chad.

"What? Come on!" He shoved her hand out of the way.

Jazzy Stomped moving the Ground under Chad effectively throwing him backward. "Touch her again I dare you!" Aaron shouted at Evie hanging on to him, almost terrified. Obviously she was Acting.

"It wasn't them. It was their parents." Ryder Sneered In a deep angry Voice. "If we follow our parents who the hell son are you cause it sure as Hell ain't Cinderella she wouldn't judge anyone."

Ella held up her hand and the commotion of the eight stopped immediately "And of us Chad, Huh?" she said in a calm melodic voice. "Are we, the children of royals, Evil?"

"No bu-"

"But we were raised by Villains." Ella interrupted her voice soft and sweet but demanding and attention grabbing. "So by your logic we're villains, but again by your own logic you are no royal."

Everyone was rendered speechless, Jazzy turned to the parents, Aziz and melody, "Sorry to cut this short."

"Come." Ella beckons her friends forward.

~~~

They sat at a table in the plaza, talking in hushed voices. The voices around them, hauntingly loud. They gradually quieted as Ben drew near "Hey, guys. How is everyone?" no one answered. "Yeah? Hey, listen. Forget about it. All right? It was nothing. Forget about it. Let it go. Tomorrow, after the coronation, I promise everything will be okay." he had Mal's shoulders in hand and leaned down to her. "I have to go. I'll see you guys later."

When he walked away Doug tried to come up, "Listen, Evie, I wanna talk about earlier today. I just..." Chad Called him.

"It's my fault, Doug. I'm sorry." She faked an apology. She really held no emotion whatsoever, it was easy to flip the switch at Aarons command.
~~~

"No it's mine"

Chad called him again, "What?!"

Chad gave him a look, "Doug..." Evie said in a warning tone.

"Sorry I can't." he walked over to Chad and sat down, "Okay."

"He's a coward." Evie grimace.

"How long does she think that's gonna last? Mal is just the bad girl infatuation." Audrey said Behind Mal.

Jane leaned down to her, "Yeah. I mean, he's never gonna make a villain a queen."

Ryder growled as Mal flipped open her spell book, "Beware forswear undo Jane's Hair." she moved her finger. Jane screamed at her hair and went back to its short straight bob cut. Mal and the other VK's walked up, "There's a lot more where that came from."

"Excuse me, who do you think you are?" Audrey said, looking at Mal.

"Does she look like she's kidding?" Jazzy snapped a shadow flaring around her.

Mal flipped the book open again and they all started running, "I'm really looking forward to tomorrow. Let's grab that wand and blow this Popsicle stand." no remorse in her voice whatsoever, ***'finally'*** Ella thought the mark of a queen. Her smirked her black hair growing darker, as did Aarons, Jazzy, and Ryders. no one noticed the colors in their hair grow more vibrant as their glowing gazes darkened. No one noticed the hints of Purple hue in Jazzy's eyes The flecks of red in Aarons, The blue the grew in Ryders or the Black Rimming Ella's

Ella's 'spell' was finally taking hold, unfortunately for The Black Magic Queen this metaphorical spell would only last so long, and two among their group would soon cause her not so graceful fall from villainy.

Chapter Twelve

[image]

They were all in Ella And Jazzy's Room going over their plan early that morning before they got dressed. "We all know what this looks like." Ella took the reins "So it'll be up on the dais under the beast's spell jar, and we'll be coming in from here. Mal will be in the very front. We will be up on the balcony. Okay. Carlos?"

"Okay, so I'll find our limo, so we can break the barrier, and, uh, get back on the island with the wand." The last thing he wanted to do was go back to the island, Back to his mother.

"Perfect. Evie?"

"Yea?" She asked unsure and scared.

Jazzy pulled out what looked like a perfume bottle, "You will use this to take out the driver. Two sprays and he'll be out like a light."

"Once were back on the isle me and Ryder will break the barrier,"

"Leaving me and Jazzy to hold down the Villains with our magic," Jay stated confidently.

"And all the VK's are let out to Play." Aaron smiled, "I'm gonna lead my siblings to neverland." They all looked at him for a moment realizing he was fantasizing about killing Pan.

Ryder shook his head, "Hold up on Homicide until after we're settled." he nodded and shook his head clearing away the disturbing thoughts.

"Dismissed." Everyone dispersed.

Ella cupped Jay's cheek before he left pulling him down to her height since he was a full eight inches taller than her and kissed him, "Soon I promise then you can have whatever toy you want."

"Why would I need any toys when I have an amazing Queen like you."

She touched their foreheads and closed her eyes, "I love you so much." her actions, everything, while done in the name of revenge was for Jay, he who deserved the world and a throne of his own. He who had shown her nothing but true love and honesty, he who drove her mad with love, her one and only weakness. She would refuse to admit that but it was her truth.

~~~

After finding out Ben wasn't really spelled it, killed Mal to know the pain she would cause him. Mal, and Ben, walked up to Belle and Adam, the fairy could feel Ella's eyes burning into her soul even if she wasn't looking at her "About the other day, I just..." Mal tried to explain for her and her friends.

"I told Ben this wasn't going to be easy," Beast said.

"You also taught me that a king has to believe in himself. Even when it isn't easy."

"I did? I... how very wise of me." He fixed himself when Belle elbowed him.

"Ben, we are very proud of you. You keep listening to your heart."

"Thanks, mom." Ben smiled.

"You'll make a fine king," Beast said to his son.

"Wish me luck" he said to Mal

Ben walked up to fairy godmother with everyone bowing to him. Ella leaning on the railing glaring holes into the back of his head.

He kneeled in front of fairy godmother, "Do you solemnly swear to govern the peoples of Auradon with justice and mercy as long as you shall reign?"

"I do solemnly swear"
~~~

"Then it is my honor and my joy to bless our new king" Fairy godmother moved the wand over them then a hand grabbed the wand. A violent stream of magic flew out.

"Great" Ella muttered sarcastically. "Come on" They all ran down.

"Child what are you doing?" fairy godmother shouted.

Jane was having trouble controlling the wand since she had Dulled magic, Sparks were flying everywhere. "If you wont make me beautiful I'll do it myself. "Bibbidi-bobbidi-boo! "

"Take cover," Adam Shouted.

Mal moved to retrieve the wand, "Be careful Mal" Belle called as she wrestled it from Jane's grasp.

When she Got it she held it in a defensive position. Sacred, she ran away into the crowd where Lonnie pushed her behind her to protect the timid girl. "Mal Give me the wand," Ben asked.

"stand back"

"It's okay"

"Ben I said stand back" She snapped.

"I told you so," Audrey said. she shut up when Mal pointed the wand at her. The others came running through the back door and down the hall right behind Mal.

"Let's go" Carlos said.

"Revenge time" Jay added doing the same.

"You really want to do this," Ben said. "If this is about your parents-"

Ella laughed, it was a laugh broken by years on the isle, years of mental and emotional abuse, it was something completely insane, "Ha! You thought they would do all this for their parents." she sobered up, "No Ben it was for us. For all of us." Jazzy snapped her fingers and a book dropped into her hands which she immediately

handed to Ella. "I'm gonna tell you a story that starts here in Auradon when the four kingdoms were still the four kingdoms." Ella snapped her fingers restraining the people in her immediate vision, "Our eyes glowed," they replicated it. "And so did this book and a prophecy was revealed." She flipped the book open, she cleared her throat and read out:

Four from here
Four from there
Four that will show that they care
The old order will be uncurled
They will band together to change the world
But if they act so naïve they will underachieve
The bad and the glad
The good and the Misunderstood
The good who had
The Bad that withstood

"And we were sent away so that this never happened" Ryder continued, "Prophecy's can't be avoided Though, Adam. I'm actually surprised that Fairy Godmother thought the barrier would stop us and that Belle," he marched up to her, "Sweet intelligent little Belle." He was right in front of her but Adam covered her. Ryder looked Bored and Got him to his knees in a second kicking him in the back off the dais. "Didn't flip out when Ben brought Eight from the isle Over. You're supposed to be smart." he tapped her frontal lobe but otherwise did nothing.

"And no one thought to look at the book ever again, to see this:

Bad and good shall merge
a radical change will surge
will it be for the best
or will their friends be put to rest
no fate is straight
especially for a certain eight
will eight let evil reign and good be chained
or will the eight let true good shine through.

And it doesn't take a genius to assume here that no we're not doing that."

"Your royals You're not supposed to help these Villains." Chad went off on a tangent, Why he thought this was a good Idea was unknown. Aaron Smiled hearing the interruption, He looked at Ella and Ryder with a pleading face, Ella nodded her glare fixed in the blond. The VK's were trying to make faces to get him to shut up but he didn't notice. A dagger grazed his cheek not only cutting a few hairs but drawing some blood, in seconds he was on a ground and Aaron was over him with his sword pointed at the princes Throat, His suit glowed a soft Blue and changed into a nice Pirate coat and a hat appearing on his head, looking every bit like the boy he was raised to be.

Audrey gasped, "You can't- you can't do that, It's illegal you can easily be stopped."

"You really wanna play this game Princess." Jazzy Hiked up her dress and revealed her Isle outfit underneath and on the belt was a row of small Dolls she held out her hand and the one in a pink dress was dropped into her hand by a shadow, she stabbed a pin into its arm repeatedly and watched as scratches and scars appeared on the princess. Jazzy's eyes shimmered with insanity, "Don't play with me, I play to win." she squeezed the doll making Audrey Choke. But she suddenly dropped the doll into a shadows hand who hooked it back on her belt. She grimaced and looked up "Carlos hand." he did as told no problem and held her hand as green smoke flew in from the roof.

"I'm back" Maleficent sing-songed.

"Go away, mother." Mal snapped

"She's funny. Oh! I'm so... you're very funny. Here. Wand me. Chop, chop."

Jazzy tilted her head at the fairy pure sass and boardom etched upon her face

Maleficent looked at the voodoo princess and glared, "what's your issue girl." She was merely going to use this small princess as a way to remind Mal what love and can did to a person.

Jazzy decided to mess with the fairy, "we were kinda in the middle of out own thin here, not to mention the complete lack of flash, you bore people."

Maleficent's glare hardened, "Let's see how boring you find this!" She aimed her staff at Jazzy only for her eyes to glow at that moment forcing Carlos' too as well and forcing a jolt of Magic out of his body, though Jazzy and to Maleficent and in a puff of red and Blue the century old Fairy was gone.

The room gasped but none louder than Mal. "That wasn't part of the deal!" she shouted, wand still in hand.

"Oh please she's not dead. I had Carlos's hand, you know the animal guy." She walked over to the dispersing smoke and picked up a small purple lizard. "I thought, what can I do to stop her and not break our promise while still torturing her. Then I realized, the one thing she hates most, Love, she has to learn to love to be freed from this form so it will take forever." She Dropped the Lizard into Mal's Hand.

Ella noticed some people in the back trying to get out.

Wither and Decay
End this destiny
Break these earthly chains
And set the spirit free
The spirit free

The room started collapsing, in coughing fits, Ella's eyes Blacked out and her hair straightened turning pitch black. She walked Towards the door and nodded to her brother to finish the incantation. He smirked.

Take what has been hurt
Grant them no mercy
Bend and break the reigns
And set the spirit free
The spirit free

Ryder was in the exact same condition as his sister's hair and eyes

blacked. Ella shut the door and as she came to called, "Aaron lock them in." he whipped out a hand and the door froze over. "Nice try but you don't leave until we say you can."

She walked back to the Dias, "Where was I."

"The staff," Aaron pointed out.

"Oh yeah," Ella Smirked, "This is our world now love and we do what we want, and really we're only stealing one of the four Kingdoms as the others were where we would rule when we got older, But really we don't want to wait anymore." She picked up dragon eye, as Mal reached out for her mothers staff she was halted by the girl who held up a finger, "I told you, you would get your Mothers staff when we're done." she snapped her fingers and the staff shrunk and she stuffed it in her pocket. "Wand" Mal bowed her head and looked at Ben before handing over the wand.

She Tapped her cheek, "Ryder Make your Speech to your people and keep your girlfriend with you so you can comfort her."

"Carlos get the car." Evie said, Aaron and Carlos running over to the door.

"Come to the car when you're done."

Ben looked absolutely distraught, Mal was hugged tight to Ryder's side looking down desperately trying not to meet Ben's eye.

"Ryder it doesn't have to be like this, get Ella to give back the wand and this will all go away" Ben pleaded.

The boy actually laughed, "trying to cover it up Ben. Just like your old man, you'll cover it up with some sob story about the abandoned Royals like your old man claimed we were Evil to get the public not to hate him."

"Clearly I was right," he seemed to confident and slightly regretful. Not remorse, regret, bitter angry regret"

Mal shook her head, "If you had left them here none of this would have happened." Mal, who now had the book, opened it and tapped

the page that showed what would have happened, Happy children and the choice of good and peace. "You made them Evil, You made us Evil."

"Ryder," Ben tried one last time.

The boy just smirked. "I'm running this show Ben, This crown." He plucked the golden crown off the restrained king's head, "Doesn't mean anything anymore," He tossed it across the room letting it land with a Clang. He saw Lonnie try and break free of her bonds so he whipped out a hand and let chains incase her and everyone in the room, "This is my kingdom now the four kingdom's will stand tall again but this time under four monarchies. as for you three." he looked at the previous Rulers, "I know just what to do."

Mal looked up at Ryder with worry he was not okay, "For now just lock them up we have a job to do. And remember what you promised me."

"How right you are, My dear, and I would Never deny my Queen of her play thing." he said looking at Ben.

~~~

The two ran down the steps and hopped into the car after seeing the driver sprawled out on the ground. Jay was driving and Ella was up front next to him. "Lets go freaks." After a relatively short drive they ditched the car, "What's the highest place in the Island again."

"The Top of Maleficent's castle," they ran through the isle Everyone clapping, dresses and coats flying out behind them.

Uma looked out of the chip Shop and saw Ryder and the others run past, she smiled Knowing he kept his promise and would continue to keep them. She rushed inside and grabbed Harry and Gil. "Come on, they're back." They ran out barely remembering to grab their swords. They stood at the base of the castle and looked up at them in anticipation.

The eight climbed up the side of the castle to the roof, a hard task in dresses, heels, and dress shoes. Ella grabbed her brother's hand
~~~

and Jay grabbed Jazzy's. "By our Decree, tear it down and set them free." A jolt of Blue and Black Magic spreading across the two not their usual colors but like the colors in their Hair, But everyone was two excited to notice. As soon as the barrier opened Jazzy and Jay felt a surge of power they pulsed it out though the isle, Jays was still orange but Jazzy's was truing Purple again it went unnoticed, They Chained down everyone Ella Told them to. Aaron spoke now, everyone around hearing him, "like we told you, Your parents failed it's your turn." They cheered, hugged each other, laughed, danced, some people locking lips. "We need to restore the barrier to keep them in, run off, get all of you off this island Set sail, run across the bridge, swim it doesn't matter, and wreak havoc on Auradon as of tomorrow the new Reign begins."

The eights eyes glow and the cheers dull around them, Ella smirked and her laughed echoed like a power drunk symphony around the eight of them, insanity, abuse and, danger all echoing though that single powerful laugh her eyes shimmered gold but black flecks started to swing amongst the gold irises "Oh dearies, The story has only just begun."

END OF SECTION ONE

Section two: Beating the Clock

[image]

[image]

Ella: She's coming , Hurry please, we don't have much time please I'm almost out of time

Ryder: I'm the last damaged I was really small, they though less would do better on me

Jazzy: I've been stuck in this stupid hour glass for the last 12 years I can feel myself dying

Aaron: I haven't been able to really talk for years It feels worse then I remember

[image]

Jay: Ella You know me, It's you and me forever remember

Mal: I can't believe they would stoop so low I mean you were just kids and that was the solution

Carlos: This whole situation makes mine look like I was blessed and I didn't even have a bed

Evie: I never understood the want for raw unmatched chaos now I do. I feel violence bubbling up

[image]

Uma: Wait you're telling me this all happened cause your eyes glowed when you were like two

Harry: I love crazy that's mah' whole thing but this seems wrong on so many different levels

Gil: Okay I'm not the smartest person in the world but even I know that's just sick

In which Gil starts to hear the screams coming from the minds of the Royal four and him and Evie investigate

Or

In which a young consort gets startled out of her sleep from her partners pain and uncovers a truth hidden away for just over a decade

Or

In which a group of eleven teenagers find out that the villains have really been the victims this whole time

Ella is running out of time once she turns Eighteen that's it the clock chimes and she's gone she'll be stuck like that forever, her monster is so close to completion that its almost human and that's the scary part, the worse monsters are the ones that are human

~Am I the Villain of your story while you are the strong broken royals?~

~Cause in mine your the villains and I was the helpless princess stolen from her bed at five years old~

The truth can be altered and history can be hidden

the winners write the history books

Before we get on with part two I just wanna
Thank @TheMoonLark15 for giving me the inspiration to start this AU I've been having so much Fun writing it and I always look forward to her comments thank you so much Moon Lark
On with the story

~DarkVixen

Section two Epigraph

[image]

Chapter Thirteen

~ Chapter one of section two ~

The barrier was locked back in place as soon as Ella and Mal did a head count and made sure everyone they wanted off the isle was off the isle. Or course Head count was the simple terms, they were buys queen.

Ella did something that angered Mal to no end. She set Hades free, "He's not even close to an okay person."

"He has a Job that Adam stopped him from doing for years, Mal. The souls are probably backed up beyond belief. If you don't wanna come, that's fine, go home and help the others with the boarders." Mal groaned but stomped off.

Ella led herself into Hades Lair looking at the withering forms of Pain and Panic under her Boyfriend's Magic, "Hades." She called through the tunnel. She heard loud barks and followed them only to see Hades asleep on a couch and a record player playing dog barks. "This is sad," the man immediately looked up, "Oh how the king of the underworld has fallen."

"What do you want, sunshine?" Hades actually knew all of the royals pretty well and was on fairly friendly terms with them. He felt for them, to be part of something bigger then yourself and have it upheaval and unjust paranoia an fear, Hades hadn't hurt anyone in a millennia since he tried to kill Hercules he had just taken to doing his job, But he was still locked away here.

Hades had been Ella's informant, he was a god who was some how trapped by a fairy whose most notable feat was giving a girl a dress and carriage for a few hours. how was it possible that she defeated the god of darkness without using something as equally dark.

"You're free."

He took off his sunglasses and raised an eyebrow, "How is that even possible?" Ella reached into her coat (well jays, dress coat that he threw off before starting the spell) and pulled out the wand and into the pocket and pulled out the shrunken Scepter of Maleficent, his eyes were wide. He stumbled up and to his feet, stalking towards her, "Where is Maleficent?"

"Jazzy gave her a punishment fit for the mistress of evil." At the look on Hades face she scoffed, "She's alive"

That's all he needed to hear, "I'm going home." he smirked. he really didn't want her in his realm with his wife who actually somewhat cared about him.

"Oh" Ella stopped him "and I know you're a 'ruthless villain'," Those were his words not hers. "But try and make nice with your daughter, If and when her demigod powers come to light she'll need a mentor. And you and I both know you deeply care for her." Hades looked to be contemplating it as he shadow traveled back to his realm back where he belonged.

Ella walked back to maleficent castle where Jazzy and Jay were exhausted. The blond pulled out the wand and Levitated them down and basically carried them back to the bridge. She set them down and locked the barrier back in place Letting Jazzy and Jay Collapse. "That was the most draining experience of my life." Jay huffed. Jazzy nodded along Kneeled on the floor.

Ella hulled the two Up, "Come one Carlos went back with the others to help make the crowns." Ella walked with them slowly to Auradon castle passing many VK's who were looting, scaring, breaking, or harming. "Audrey is gonna have a hard clean up." She said holding Jays hand

"You're putting Audrey on clean up?" Jazzy asked, laughing.

"Her and a few others, Just until I can think of how to punish them properly for what they did."

When they got back to the castle the grand hall was already cleared. People being let go or Locked up depend on the person and the severity of their crime. Doug and Lonnie were in an Upper dungeon for the time being and would be relocated tonight to Tirulia where Evie and Aaron respectively would decide what to do with their toys. Jane was in Jar Next to Carlos With her hands pressed against the glass, He would decide what to do with her in Agrabah, and Ben was in a lower Dungeon with his parents. Of course there were others but these were the ones who would be entertainment for New rulers.

They made their way to the meeting room, clothes already changed and sat down in their places, Jazzy made her way next to Carlos who was leaning over a map with a neutral face. Until Jazzy pulled him back into his seat and ran her had though his hair making him look her in the eye as always a tactic she found worked well on the boy, if she just looked him in the eye he though her words and actions were genuine and honest something the poor boy lacked in his life. Ella at the end and Jay at her right hand. "Okay what have we got so far?" Ella asked.

"We've already worked on Separating where each kingdom would end, what close proximity kingdom would be under what rule and seeing how we can Blur the borders." Evie answered, "We just can't figure out what to do with Cinderella's Kingdom, It's the same distance away for Auradon and Tirulia."

"Let me see." The map was twisted around so Ella could see the problem, "oof yeah, let's make this kingdom a border blur, This side of Auradon rule and This side of Tirulia rule both run on the same Time zone so cutting the kingdom down the middle does nothing but confuse people about where they are. But you all would have to have a meeting every few months about rules, can you do that?" The four nodded. "Alright then that's settled, let's work on other border Kingdoms to blur a few laws and housing for the new Vk residents before heading to home, it's late."

After figuring out the border blurs and housing to be settled in the morning, because honestly it was so late no one was out and they had no idea where the Vk's went, They went home. Jazzy picked up the jar that had Jane in it, giving it a shake and cackling before

handing it over to Carlos. A few minutes later Aaron and Evie came out with Doug and Lonnie in Chains already looking worse for wear. Lonnie tugged at the chains, "Where are you taking us!?"

"Relax" Aaron hissed, "you're just coming to the Tirulia castle. If you behave, maybe you can have a room and not get locked up in the dungeon 24/7." Lonnie wasn't scared of Aaron yet so his natural charm and manipulation skills didn't work on Lonnie the same way they worked on Evie. She continued to struggle against her chains while Doug tried to calm her down as nothing would get them anywhere by fighting at the moment. "I'm surprised you wanted the dwarf, my queen," Aaron drawled.

"Oh I wouldn't be able to deal with Chad's insensate whining about not being a prince and being Locked up." She yanked Doug back and ran her pointed nails over his cheek, "besides this one is much prettier." Aaron tightened his lips Chad would have been preferred but he couldn't let Evie know what was happening so had have to make due

Ella slipped Maleficent's staff, still shrunken, into Ryder's Pocket with Instructions to give it to Mal when she proved her loyalty. She left with Jay soon after, "Are you sure you don't want any toys my king." She said with a dangerous flame dancing in her eyes.

"Why would I, I have you my queen." he kisses her temple and leads her to their car. She clenched her fist, She would have to make due and Place Audrey under her lock and key.

While in the car Ella falls asleep and Jay notices her hair changing colors a bit, the black in her hair would flicker between a faded black and a dark shiny black. She jerked violently in her sleep and it stayed shiny black. He wanted to say something but the thought of facing her anger, the same Anger Evie was facing, was something he never wanted to experience. This was one thing Jay decided he should keep to himself.

Mal looked over to Ryder who was looking out the window, as soon as they were all gone, "Can I see him?" Ryder raised an eyebrow before his eyes widened. She stood on her tiptoes and looked over his shoulder, Uma was making her way towards the Palace, "She

knows I'm here if you just let me see Ben we won't even be in the same room."

He huffed but nodded, "Fine, But be careful his parents Audrey and Chad are still there." She took the key out from around his neck and handed it to her. She had always thought that was the key to the padlock bracelet on his wrist evidently it wasn't.

"Thank you Ryder," she hugged him. There was the sound of someone clearing their throat, they both turned and saw Uma leaning in the doorway arms crossed. "I'm gonna go now, thanks again." she nods at Uma before making her way down to the dungeon area pulling her coat on along the way.

She walks down the steps, her heeled boots clicking against the stone steps. "You!" She jumps a little and looks at Audrey who was in a Cell with her parents and Grandmother.

She straightened herself out and glared, "I wouldn't talk that way to the woman who holds the key." she held out the key letting it dangling in front of them just out of reach.

A desperate voice yelled to her, "Where's my daughter?" The Fairy turned and saw Mulan and Shang. It wasn't angry, more worried though anyone could see she was just a little angry.

"Relocated to Tirulia with Doug, Aaron took a liking to her meaning if she behaves for him he'll treat her well, Evie wanted Doug." she turned to Ben who was in the Cell opposite his parents "Come on." She unlocked the cell and held out a hand to him.

He looked at her hesitantly. He was scared, angry and, well Broken, "Where are you gonna take me."

"Upstairs back to your room," she said simply. It was clear he didn't trust her. "Ben please."

"No I can't trust you Mal I did once and look what happened." Mal looked around at the Cells full of mighty royals easily taken down by eight teenage Thieves, liars, and Manipulators. It seemed wrong, something else was definitely going on but she couldn't pinpoint it.

"You didn't care about me at all."

"Ben You have no idea what I was up against, What I'm still up against." she snapped, she didn't care that these royals could see her and that they could all hear her. "Ben I was falling for you hard But with eyes watching me from all angles. I couldn't do anything, they're all dangerous, they could curse me, drown me, kill me and drag me to the other side. What was I Supposed to do? I was out numbered with no escape. The only thing I could do was fall in line. Ryder could sing a few words and I could die, I don't wanna die I'm terrified." She admitted "The best I could do was get him to let me keep you here in the castle and as long as you don't get in his way you'll be fine. Please Ben." She pleaded with him.

"You don't actually believe this do you!" Audrey shrieked, "She's been lying to you this whole time." Her father covered her mouth not wanting any harm to befall his daughter.

Ben looked at her hand then looked behind her, "What about my parents?"

Mal's eyes widened, "Are you crazy do you want me to die!? I don't know what's gonna happen to them but the only way to save you from that fate is for you to come with me," He gave her a broken look "Ben, Please."

"Ben." His parents warned, But he saw the look in Mal's eyes; it was the same look he saw back at the Lake. She wasn't Evil, she was really trying to help him. She could have cursed Audrey a moment ago but didn't. Tears were glistening over her eyes. If he wanted Any hope of getting back to the way things were being in this cage wouldn't help him

He took her hand grasping it tightly, Mal pulled him to his feet and Hugged him burying her face in the crook of his neck. "Mal!"

She stiffened and pulled away, "Don't freak out." She moved her finger in a circular motion producing chains bounding his wrist ankles and neck but instead of her normal green magic it was an intense shade of purple. She turned to Audrey and her family, "Huddle in the corner and Cower."

"Excuse me?" Queen Leah asked Mal like she was insane, "A royal does not cower before a teenager,"

"You did upstairs, and you will now if you want even a sliver of hope of getting out of these cages? So just, Cower!" She yelled slamming her ring clad fist against the metal Bar letting the loud sound bounce off the walls of the dungeons, just as Ryder stepped down with a smirk on his face.

[image]

[image]

All Hail your new Kings and Queens (Do you notice anything different about the VK's crowns compared to the royal four) (I'll let you know right now *Ella* has a very 'practical' reason behind these crown and there is something very wrong with them)

~DarkVixen

Chapter Fourteen

[image] [image]

~ Chapter two of section two ~

Uma Smiled as Ryder let the Barrier fall, Her, Harry and Gil were among the first to ditch leaving behind their ship and snatching the Jolly Roger up from Hook. Harry expressed wanting to head to Neverland so he was planning to dock in Tirulia for a few days and go with Aaron, CJ and Harriet. Uma decided she wanted to find Ryder so off the coast of Auradon she wished her crew good luck, named Harry captain, and jumped overboard she felt had home in the water but she had somewhere else to go where she would feel even better.

She shook herself off once on shore and made a beeline for the castle, she passed shops and saw Civilians running in fear, she heard screams, she heard terror, she saw VK's Looting and causing pain in their wake. It was magnificent. She finally found her way to the castle which unguarded as no one was dumb enough to take on Ryder she saw him look out the window and she smiled, his face lighting up and eyes widening, behind him she saw Mal look over his shoulder.

She couldn't be too mad at the girl anymore, she had made good on her end, she had duped the prince and grabbed the wand which set them free. She knew Mal wasn't into Ryder either so now all the negative feelings left for Mal were from petty childhood rivalries. She wanted to move past that. They were going to be seeing each other a lot and it would be better if neither of them was at each other's throat.

She made her way through the maze of hallways almost getting lost a few times. Until she finally found Ryder and Mal, she heard them talking and decided to wait in the doorway until they were done but being visible so it didn't appear as if she was eavesdropping, "Fine, but be careful his parents Audrey and Chad are still there." he handed her a key on a chain

"Thank you, Ryder," she leaned up a bit and hugged him. She felt her Cheeks burn and cleared her throat, they both turned and saw the sea witch leaning in the doorway arms crossed. Ryder's face lit up again, attention completely on her. Yeah, Uma won't have to harbor any jealousy or bitterness towards Mal, "I'm gonna go now, thanks again." Mal nodded at Ryder before passing Uma tilting her head in acknowledgement.

The teal haired woman watched her Leave and saw Jagged scars peeking out of the back of her shredded T-shirt that were covered when she pulled on her jacket, "Uma?" She turned Back to the young man with a crooked grin on his face who was now right in front of her.

"Those scars on her back, what are they from?"

"She's part Dragon, when she was born, she had wings, Auradon didn't like that."

Uma's eyes Widened in horror, "Whatever you do make sure that King and Queen suffer."

"You're standing up for Mal?"

She shrugged, "She did what was right in the end and I'm gonna be seeing her a lot more so I might as well get on better terms with her."

"So, no Anger or Jealousy?"

"What do I have to be Angry or Jealous about? She gets to do all the boring Queen stuff and I get to be with you. I don't have to sit in council meetings or deal with the stupid Princes and Princesses I just get to be here and decided a rule from time to time." it wasn't a bad deal really.

She ran her hand through his blue hair, The same blue as hers. "Let me go make sure that they haven't tried to break out yet, With Maleficent gone Mal might be unstable."

She nodded and let him walk forward falling in right behind him, her hand tingled and she heard a distant scream, "Ella! Uma! Mal!

Someone! Help!" It echoed and slowly faded away. It sounded extremely like Ryder, just strained, scared, Tired, and worried. She looked around for a source but there was none, and Ryder hadn't seemed to have heard it.

Before any questions could be asked, they were at the doors leading down to the dungeon, "Cower!" Mal's Voice yelled, A slamming was heard, metal against the metal, letting the loud sound bounce off the walls of the dungeons Just as Ryder stepped down with a smirk on his face. Uma Followed shortly after and saw the former Prince Ben In chains wrapped around Mal's fist That dangled at her side. Her ring clad fist, had been what hit the metal bars, The Rose Family huddled in the corner of their Cell. There was a crazed smile on her face and a deadly fire dancing in her eyes.

She looked to the side, her smile falling just the smallest bit but the fire still burning. "What a Stunning Sight." Stunning, To Ryder that was not a word of Beauty, it was something impressive or shocking. In this case he must have meant impressive. "The high and mighty Rose family cowering under the small fist of a teenager. It almost seems wrong," He cackled madly. Mal looked to the side and saw Uma looking around confusion and worry evident on her features. Normally she would be Smiling like a mad woman at Ryder's laugh. "All of you" he snapped bringing Mal's attention back to him, "curling beneath the voice of a bunch of raggedy street rats, a team of Thieves, liars, and Manipulators, sorcerers barely worth their magic. If that stopped you, how powerful can you really be?" He turned to Ben. "Bring him up"

Mal Yanked Ben forward and the four stalked upstairs, Ben watched the fire leave her eyes as she looked around scared. This wasn't an act Mal really was terrified of Ryder. "I'm just gonna take Ben back-"

"No," Ryder snapped, making Mal flinch, "I know it late," He said, turning, "and we're all tired, But We need to do something first." He led them to what used to be Adam's Office. They now assumed it would be his. He Beckoned not only Mal but Uma to his sides. He placed a hand on Umas neck, goosebumps sprouting in his wake making him smirk, He lifted her chain That held the key and pulled off the bottom revealing a long thin Needle. He placed the bottom part in his coat pocket and took Mals Hand, he took the raven skull

ring on her right middle finger and tapped the top letting a soft blue magic aura, much different from his normal sharp gold one, encase it then lifted the head up revealing a compartment filled with blue liquid. He dipped the needle inside, "Hold this don't let it touch you." he told Uma, she did as tolded and held it outward. He properly closed up the ring. Then took the bottom of the key and opened that padlock on his wrist or what the girl's thought was a padlock inside was a vial of a purple liquid. He took the needle and dunked it in there as well. He closed up the lock and Yanked Ben over to him, pricking his finger Then put everything back together.

Ben looked at his finger confused, "what was that whole show for?"

"In case you get any ideas about harming one of us, the mere thought will bed you for a week. You will be physically incapable of hurting us, think of it as selective bodily control."

"That sounds against nature." Ben said in the most condescending voice he could.

"I'd watch your tone. You're not a king anymore." Ryder said stalking up to Ben.

Mal got in between the two, "Please" she said with a slight wince.

Ryder knowing what she's already been through nodded, he stepped forward and pulled her new crown off her head "Get him out of here" He jerked his head at the door. Shortly after Uma would leave to find her, leaving Ryder to sit at the window with his computer in his lap gazing out at the night sky as he waited for Uma none the wiser to the huge mistake he had made.

Mal pulled him down the hall then let his chains disappear, "Do you wanna die, you're lucky he cares about what I say." The poor girl shook her head, one of her partners was a lunatic and the other had no regard for his own safety. "Maybe I can make nice with Uma." she said, creasing her eyebrows, and rubbed her head. "Where is your room?" Ben led her there and she lightly shoved him forward, "Again I'm sorry about your parents, if you need me text me and I'll be here in a second."

She went to leave but Ben grabbed her hand, "Mal," She turned back, "Thank you, And I'm sorry for thinking you turned on us so easily." he rubbed the back of his neck.

"It's okay, it's fine If I would have been in your shoes, I would have thought the same." She kissed his cheek and headed off to find a room for the night, hopefully close by.

"Mal" She stiffened upon hearing Uma's voice; her breathing quickened a bit. She had been through too much today to deal with someone who hated her.

"H-hey Uma," she stuttered. It was slight and unnoticeable, But Uma, ever the observant witch she was, noticed.

She smiled, "I'm not here to duel you or anything, I figured since we'll be seeing quite a bit of each other we could hang out more. You know, try to be friends, Make this situation a whole lot more bearable for all of us. I mean it's not like anything is gonna get done with us trying to rip each other's throats out every ten seconds."

Mal breathed out a sigh, "yeah you're right, maybe we can try to be friends." She held out a hand, which Uma shook with no hesitation.

"Oh, and I told Ryder to make sure Adam and Belle Pay for what they did to you, and what they did to you is just sick" Uma said with a sinister smile.

"What are you talking about?"

"Your wings."

"Yeah, I got that what do you mean what they did to them."

Uma motioned for her to follow, "Ryder told me but he probably didn't know about this. While I was looking for you and I found the trophy room." Once they got there Uma opened the door and the first thing visible was two sets of wings. A pair clearly belonging to a baby and a pair that used to belong to an adult. Mal gagged and covered her mouth. "I get it if you don't wanna get close but, your name is on the plaque underneath, they treated it as an act of heroism." She saw Mal getting angry, "I doubt Ben knew, nothing in

here belonged to him and I picked the lock out of curiosity, it seems to have been privet for Belle and Adam

Have you ever seen anyone place a severed arm on display, or a severed leg, no? well that's all Mal could compare this to, that was part of her body, a part of her missing and treated like a shiny toy. Mal's eyes gleamed dangerously, any guilt she was feeling about today was gone. Her fist clenched her, eyes aggressively lit up,

It was so aggressive that down in Corona Jay, who was carrying Ella to her bedroom stumbled forward in pain and dropped Ella who simultaneously shot up in his arms like a bullet and clutched her head in pain. Ryder, who was sitting at his new desk, ended up slamming his head on the computer in front of him. Carlos dropped the jar holding Jane thank the stars she was stuck as a small fairy for the time being. Jazzy burned herself with a hairdryer Evie tumbled out of her bed and Aaron slammed his head into a window. even Uma clucted her head and beared her teeth, Harry ended up stumbling into his closet, and Gil fell out of the crows nest (He's fine).

She could practically hear the tired scream from Corona, "We just got into power, what do you have to be upset about already!?"

But something happened that surprised even Uma. Mal's hair burst into purple flames taking the vague shape of horns. She bared her teeth with two of her top teeth and two of her bottom ones pointed into fangs. She looked every bit her parents' daughter

"I'm going to kill them."

Mal and Ryder conquered a kingdom, what did you do today? comment it'll be fun I did Landrey, I didn't have the motivation to overthrow a monarchy today...maybe tomorrow.

Did you notice anything odd about the interaction with Mal, her crown and Ryder? Things are gonna get real crazy real soon. Ryder has only been on the throne for a day and already made a huge mistake (honestly me if I ever tried to rule anything).
~DarkVixen

Chapter Sixteen

~~Three Years ago~~

"Can you shut up you she-angel!" Ella yelled at herself, The voice in her head was louder than usual. "Why am I even able to hear you? I thought I pushed you to the back of my head ages ago." She asked, laying down on her queen sized bed, The mattress was old and had holes in it and there were for sure a few springs sticking out but it was the best it got around here.

'I'm part of this body too, you can't get rid of me.'

"Not yet at least. Gahh!" she clutched the side of her head, and her eyes sparked up gold. "What the heck did you do?"

'Nothing that was me this time, at least I don't think it was.'

She heard Ryder make a similar noise across the hall, and stumble into her closed door with a loud bang, "Come in" She smirked.

Ryder threw the door open with an annoyed expression, "You know I don't knock." she shrugged and sat up sitting crisscross. "Did you get a sharp pain in your head?"

She nodded, "yeah," She squinted her eyes and placed a hand on her chin. As Ryder sat down on her bed she held out her hand and a book fell into them, "It's not a good idea to use all your black magic on the aisle. We only have a limited supply while we're stuck."

"No you only have a limited supply, I'm the most powerful of us, mine is unlimited,"

"Sister just because you aren't like the rest of us doesn't mean you are the most powerful."

"No but look at your mark. It's white, you're too Optimistic, to Positive, Your easy, and good, no insanity to your name. You

couldn't use Dark magic even if you wanted to" She gagged out, The boy glared at her, she was right, Ryder couldn't use black magic no matter how hard he tried, the prince inside him was just too good. He was much younger then the others he didn't understand evil when he got dropped here. "Also I'm older" he glared at her harder, he couldn't help the fact that he was like this, "Don't call me sister."

She leaned back and read through the book, Ryder could tell something was very wrong when sneered, He looked over her shoulder, "Damn it."

Ella closed the book and swung herself off the bed, shooting up like a rocket. "Go get Aaron I'll find Jazzy, meet at the arcade."

He nodded and rushed off finding his boots as Ella hopped around trying to pull hers on. "Bye mam!" Ryder shouted, "Bye Pa!" She grabbed her red Jacket off the coat rack.

The two shoot off in opposite directions. Ella banged the rhythm on the door and was let in by little Celia. "Thank CeCe where's your sister?"

"Which one?"

"Jazzy."

"She's either stealing money from customers or sewing a doll that looks like the Gaston twins." It turned out that the voodoo princess was doing both. Alternating between sewing the dolls, pretending to be tired and walking around a bit stealing change bags.

Ella stood at the top landing and caught Jazzy's attention by simply snapping. The girl's head immediately snapped to Ella who motioned to the back office where her father was sitting. This was Facilier's side hustle it's where he worked during summers and weekends. Jazzy nodded, grabbing the unfinished dolls and sliding into the back room and without a word to her father she pulled out the four chairs.

~~~

Ryder, as small as he was, was able to duck and wave under people
~~~

before ramming into the only person he knew smaller than him, Carlos De vil. "Ryder?" The small boy blushed.

"Hey Carlos, Bye Carlos" he said quickly running off confusing the boy but shrugged and made his way to Jay's house anyway. Ryder ducked into Pirates bay and caught sight of Harry Hook. "Hook! Hook!"

Harry turned and saw the small boy run up to him out of breath. "I'll go get Aaron." He nodded. The 11 year old caught sight of a girl with blue hair. She looked at him with a raised eyebrow ready to talk over and tell him off for boarding her ship without permission but stopped upon seeing Harry and Aaron approach.

Harry dropped off his younger brother then told Uma who Ryder was, rather he just gave her a run down considering he didn't know much about the boy. All Harry knew was that he was one of the royal four, was Ella's younger brother and Aarons friend.

"What's Wrong, Ry"

"Ella, headache, Problem." He huffed out, "Voodoo Arcade."

Aaron nodded, getting the gist considering he got the same headache a little while ago and almost stumbled out of the crows nest "Harry! Uma! I'll be back Later." He takes off his hook and tosses it to Harry. "Come on Kid."

They made their way back though the Isle and banged the rhythm on the door, Celia Opened it and beckoned them to follow her to the back office where Jazzy was finishing up one of the dolls and Ella had her feet on the other girl's lap twirling her dagger. "It's about time," She placed her feet back on the floor. Ryder took the other seat next to Ella and Aaron the seat next to him.

"Where are the cards, Shadow man. And why is this happening?"

"It seems that anything that would have happened is finally unraveling so any loose ends need to be tied up." he said, shuffling the cards a bit and laying them on the table. "These will come to you."

One pulled itself out and landed in front of Jazzy, another in front of Ryder and the last in front of Aaron. For once Ella wasn't important and she didn't like that.

Jazzy flipped over her card. These weren't pictures like the last ones rather riddles and an aura that would shine upon being touched by the proper person, a brown Aura glowed around the cared, relaxed, reliable and simple. She cleared her throat and read out "His ignorance is truly bliss, but do not dismiss his extended heart clear as day and plainly overt."

Ella glared but Ryder quickly picked his up to avoid any shouting, a purple Aura glowed making Ella's eyes widen slightly purple was Wise arrogant and most of all pure Magic. "A broken soul filled with resent, her heart must stole lest she start her descent."

Lastly was Aaron whose Glowed Black making Ella ready to start a fire, not only was this person, Strong willed, and disciplined they had stolen her arua and that was not going over very well, *'it's not even my aura so its not yours'* the voice in her head sang happily.

'Shut up'

"He may soon turned crazed the strong boy never praised may he be saved or let his mind be enslaved"

"So this is like extra help, But who are they?" Ryder said optimistically.

"I have a feeling your dear sister already knows.

They all looked at Ella who was shaking with rage and pulling her hair, "No! They will never know!" she snapped her eyes turned black as did her hair which started to flare out floating around her. "My answer is final now leave!" Her aura burst out of her and covered the room.

The three scampered from the room as Facilier just sat there and waited for the contents of his office to stop floating. "This black magic is corrupting her." he said as his mug floated back down.

"Good maybe then I'll actually get something done." she said with

malice the girl's hair was still floating and her eyes were still black but her Aura had receded to a faint glow surrounding her.

The man sighed, "Not telling them will affect them, One will give himself away, a dangerous thing to do here, one will descend into madness, and the last will go completely insane."

"I don't care for others, Facilier just my end goal let them go off the rails. Ryder is too trusting, he doesn't understand what a stepping stone is. I have a plan and it only requires Mal, Evie, Jay and Carlos. They are useless, nothing but a distraction." she raised her hand and levitated the card before curling her hand into a fist and letting them be engulfed in black flames.

"This could lead to your downfall."

"Not if they don't know they have the power to. I'll just snuff them and it'll all be fine." Her hair faded back down to its blonde state leading to her huffing out dramatically for a moment before the black streaks returned and she gained composure, her eyes dimmed back to green and her aura dispersed. She left the room and ignored the other three questions.

Facilier looked down at the cards curing into ash on his desk and sighed. "Belle Beast, you have brought this on yourself, and as much as I hate you I pity your future and fear your end will be bloody." Ella snapped her fingers at a picture of beats as she left the alley letting it light up in flames she was angry, burns left in her wake on the concrete people fled the scene scared for their lives.

She was a Queen just not the type she wanted to be, She made her way to pirates bay, "Uma!" The girl turned to her ally. "I have a proposition for you, Harry and Gil."

She called over her mussel and nodded "Go ahead."

"So me, Ryder Jazzy and Aaron have a little plan that involves leaving the Isle," Their eyes widened. "We've recruited Mal, Jay, Evie, and Carlos, they're sorta non-negotiables." she sneers for effect. "Magic's sake ya know."

"When we get off I want you guys to help make some of the rules."

"How do ya plan on gettin' off." Harry asked cautiously.

She smirked, "A super genius and a bit of magic." she let gold sparks flow under her skin, "I'm a royal my magic is rooted in good they didn't block that out."

"What's the catch." Uma asked.

"No catch Just distribution of powers, You could consider the faint idea of our unlikely failure as your own but otherwise that's it."

Uma smiled, "You got yourself a deal." She shook Ellas hand not noticing the faint black light encase her hand

The same happening with Harry and Gil. She left home and locked herself in her room and sat at her vanity bringing up three images of the Pirates making sure to tether them to her so that they would only make the decisions she wanted them to when the time came. It was the only way she would get skin to skin contact for this to work so she needed to weave it accordingly. "You're not thinking this through." the voice in her head said. Her reflection in the mirror faded into a version of her with pure blond hair and bright green eyes, Rosy cheeks and in a purple sundress with a gold forearm cuff. As she twirled her arrow head in her hand.

"I know what I'm doing."

"No you don't, you're so focused on control that you have no sense of consequence."

"Yeah? Who told you that?"

"Mama back in Auradon, Gothel did the same thing to her."

"She's not your mom anymore, she gave you up."

"No she didn't."

"Yes she did now leave me alone."

The voice in her head sighed, "You're going to lose because of your own anger."

"Like you could do better."

"I could if you gave me the reigns"

"I'm not an idiot."

"Could've fooled me with the way you're acting." She screamed and slammed her fist into the mirror Making it shatter. She let her tears fall and watched the blood slip from her knuckles so the surface of her vanity not even bothering to pull the glass out, 'Just cause you smashed the mirror means nothing I'm always here and I always will until your willing to let me be the star while you write the scripts full time.'

"No, not yet, we're too close."

I hope you all Enjoy because I'm out of chapters I've been so busy I need to time to write I hopefully will have another one out this week but I have no guarantee

@TheMoonLark15 I told you it would be trippy.
~DarkVixen

Chapter Seventeen

~Twelve years ago~

"Uncle Varian!" the young man turned around just in time to catch the little blond princess Ella Fitzherbert.

He let out a laugh as he caught her, "Slow down there sunshine." he set her down, "What have I told you about running in my shop."

She rung her little hands together, "To not to Sorry uncle Varian!"

"Its okay" He ruffled her hair, "Now where are you parents?"

"Varian!? Please tell me Ella ran in here!" Eugene called running down the stairs.

The young engineer gave Ella a look, she just gave him a sheepish smile, "Yeah she's down here."

The tired father of two scrambled down the stairs with his two year old son in his arms. "Ella you can't run off like that. It doesn't matter if were in the castle or not I have to be able to find you. Especially when your mom isn't here." He explained in a calm yet tried voice.

"Sorry daddy," She apologized with no argument.

"Why isn't Rapunzel here?"

"She Belle, Jasmine and Ariel went on a 'Queen's day' I recon Adam and Eric got it easy."

Varian lets out a laugh, "If you need some help I'm willing, I can teach her a few things about alchemy. I'll leave it PG and I wont let her play with anything dangerous."

Eugene wasn't sure, "Please daddy please." Ella begged pulling on her fathers pant leg.

She gave him the baby doll eyes that he couldn't deny, "Oh alright. As long as you listen to your uncle so you don't get hurt."

She nodded with a big smile and ran over to her uncle. He swung her up on a stool and placed a pair of brass goggles over her eyes and a pair of white leather gloved on her hands, "I'm going to pretend that doesn't worry me," Her father said walking back up the stairs.

Ella loved her Uncle Varian he was probably one of her favorite people, maybe even her very favorite. She loved her parents but there was something about that fact that they were her parents that made that made her more attached to her uncle.

Varian adored the little girl, She was such a ray of sunshine, and it felt good to have someone who didn't know about his past. Someone who didn't see him as a ticking time bomb that could go off at any moment. Even Rapunzel, who saw the good in everyone, was tense around him from time to time despite his actions being about nine years go. Ella just though he was good through and through. One day he would have to tell her but right now all she saw was her fun uncle Varian someone she wanted to be with all the time.

when Rapunzel came home she kissed his cheek and he wish her goodbye. "Are you coming back tomorrow Uncle Varian?"

"No sunshine I have to finish working on something for your birthday but the day after okay." Ella's birthday was coming up and he wanted to surprise her

She pouted but then giggled as he tickled her and nodded.

~~~

Varian pulled up to the castle two days latter as promised. The atmosphere was gloomy as he walked in. Ella wasn't there to greet him like she normally was and Neither was her parents or Ryder. "Rapunzel! Eugene! Ella! Ryder!" he passed Ella's Room and heard soft sobs. He knocked on the door, "Ella, kiddo are you alright?" He didn't expect the sight he saw as he walked into the room.
~~~

Eugene Fitzherbert the thief Flynnigan rider, his hero growing up, was laying on his daughters bed sobbing into a bare stuffy. "Eugene? what's going on where's Ella, Rapunzel, and Ryder?"

He sobbed harder, "they took the kids" he made out though the teddy bare.

Fear shot though Varian, "Who? took the kids."

"Belle, Adam, and Fairy godmother." Varian felt his world crash around him once more. he darted from the room to Ryders.

He saw Rapunzel The mighty strong princess of Corona huddled on the floor of her son's nursery, his blanket that he was wrapped up in clutched in a death grip. "Rapunzel" He shook her awake.

She blinked herself awake not remembering anything for about twenty seconds as she looked around at where she was. Immediately she burst into tears, "Varian they took my babies!" She sobbed in his shoulders, "They took my little girl and my little boy."

"Why did they take them?" he asked holding her in the hug.

"Their eyes glowed, They were part of a prophecy that could topple their precious perfect empire and free the villains. At least that's what they think."

"You're telling me they stole you kids because of a hunch," She sniffled and nodded.

As soon as he managed to calm down the queen he called Cassandra. None of them had spoken to her in about six years she didn't know anything about the kids or the wedding. They had no means of contact until very recently and she told them only to call her in an emergency.

"Hello"

"Cassandra?"

"Who is this?"

"Its Varian."

"Whoa" She exaggerated, "I didn't even recognize your voice, its a lot deeper, Why are you calling i said only in emergencies."

"yeah I kind of have one, This is gonna be a lot to take in. Rapunzel and Eugene had two kids both of whom were taken from them yesterday. Can you come here and make sure they don't do anything to themselves while I go and bust some royal heads?" He growled.

"Yeah Of course I'll be right there, Are you sure your Varian" she quipped.

She must have been close by because not even an hour later she was in front of the castell jumping off her horse with her father behind her. "Hey" She hugged Varian. "How bad is it?"

He beckoned her to follow. "Pretty bad." He opened the door to Ella's room making Cassandra gasp as she saw the broken figure of Eugene Fitzherbert he pointed across the hall. her father opened the door and saw Rapunzel on the floor sobbing her heart out. "I need to go knock some heads, Please make sure they don't hurt themselves." She nodded and allowed Varian to leave. he got in his car and made his way to Auradon.

"Hello Varian" Fairy godmother smiled as she saw him get out of his car near the castle, "Did Belle and Adam call you I didn't think there was was anything to be fixed." she stumbled back as soon as Varian faced her. the dark look in his eyes made is clear that he wasn't intending to fix anything he was intending to break someone.

Without waiting to see who it was she Ran. Varian slung on a sash and belt filled with Potions and concoctions. He wasn't playing around he was out for blood.

He marched up the castle steps, The guards tried to stop him he just threw two of his chemical bombs at their feet sticking them to the floor before they could make a move against him.

He froze weapons, and disintegrated armor. He knew where the safe

room was he had built it himself. He melted the metal door off its hinges and aimed his weapon at The three royals and fairy. "You think it was smart to take my Niece and nephew?" he growled.

Ben whimpered against his mothers shoulder. Varian wasn't even fazed, not like he would have tow days ago.

Maybe Rapunzel was right to treat him like a ticking time bomb because if he didn't get an answer soon he was going to revert right back to what should have gotten him thrown on the Isle in the first place and this time he knew what not to do this time he could win. "They were part of a dangerous prophecy Varian leaving them here would have cause irreparable harm."

"And leaving me here didn't? I don't wanna be sent to the isle, personally I think your all a bunch of idiots for bringing the villains back to to life just so you could stick them on an island. Actually its you trying to play god is what it is. But you sent innocent children to the isle but left people like me, Cassandra, Eugene, Aladdin, Elsa, Bad people turned good but gods forbid a child has magic and wants to use it. Your the real villains. You're the ones who are truly evil and one day Karma's coming for you. were did you put the!?" There was no answer. "Where!?" again nothing, the three just looked down, "Oh my gods you just left them there." He shot at their feet keeping them in place and took the keys to the limo off Adam.

He rushed passed all the guards and Into the limo leaving his car behind, he was getting his goddaughter and Nephew off the isle.

Just as he was on the bridge the limo trembled and flew up crashing onto it side all of his bombs and compounds breaking or spilling, It was a strategic attack.

Varian was pulled for the limo By the Auradonian captain of the guard chained and dragged back to the castle. "Varian Because of this attack you will be sent to the isle of the lost." Adam said as if he wasn't just whimpering in fear 20 minutes ago.

"Good that way someone can watch over them," he spat.

"No!" A horse ran up to the castle with Cassandra on the back. "I remembered you tend to over reacted even if it was warranted this time. Varian is not a citizen of Auradon and since The Found Queen Rapunzel cut off all communication with you and diverged you are not allowed to imprison Varian for his attack as it was warranted as you threw the first act of war. So he'll be coming with me. But remember this Adam, If you throw another act of aggression at Corona we will be forced to retaliate and Varian almost won single handedly today."

Rapunzel, while broken, didn't want to put her people at risk, Varian wasn't so sure he wanted to risk everything to save the children like Rapunzel should have been doing. "This isn't over." he threatened as he was pulled from the castle.

when Varian Got him he tossed off his sash, Pulled off his goggled and literally threw them making them hit his shelf making him knock down the purple butterfly drone he had been working on for Ella. The confetti and paper flowers he had placed in them for him to drop at her birthday party flew everywhere. He picked it up carefully and just let the tears fall from his eyes.

Varian wasn't kidding when he said it wasn't over he spent days, that turned in to weeks, which fell into months which dragged on into years at his work desk trying any solution he could to drop that barrier, Villains be damned. but he always came up short. The most he did was release Lucifer by accident, the cat was a menace on his shop so he dropped in in Adams office. Rapunzel and Eugene while originally encouraging this work would eventually have to physically pull a 34 year old man from his desk to get him home every night. Even Cassandra, who would decided to stay and help after the chaotic events of the day, had to help getting him home.

A few days later Ella sat under a broken Awning her dress tattered and dirty holding her little brother in her lap and Aaron and Jazzy Cuddled Next to her. All were three asleep, Ella didn't get much sleep she needed to make sure they were okay. She used her finger to draw a little birthday cake in the mud with five candles on top, "Happy birthday to me, happy birthday to me, happy Birthday dear Ella Happy birthday to me" She softly sung. placing her head on her free knee.

'Hey you look like you could use some help getting home'

she heard a voice say she looked around and saw no one "Who's there"

'my name is Adreana and I'm here to help you'

"Like a fairy godmother or a guardian angle"

'not exactly handle things more peacefully. I'm less of a guardian angel and more of a helpful demon. I handle things a little more violently and with more anger its scary but effective. I don't think this situation calls for peacefulness I mean look at what they did to you.' She said a girl kneeled in front of Ella she was kind of transparent taking on a for that looked almost exactly like an older Ella just with straight black hair and blacked out eyes. *'so if you wanna fix this all you have to do is shake my had kid and I'll help you I mean your welcome to deny it but this doesn't seem ideal your on the isle no angel would be caught dead here and considering the head fairy godmother put you here that doesn't seem to be helping either.'*

Ella was entranced, "I want help." She stuck out her hand and Shook Adreana's hand, she gasped and threw her head back. Ella Hair grew black strands and her head was filled with so many vicious ideas nd so much forbidden knowledge.

"your stronger then I though for such a little girl" Ella's child like voice said but it was different it was so much older wiser and calmer. "Don't worry I'm still just helping you."

Ella placed a thumb on Ryders forehead Watching as a streak in his hair grew white, she sneered. She touched Jazzy's for head and watched a baby blue streak form, she did the same to Aaron and watched a small patch of hair turn pink. "Right now their all useless" Ella grumbled, "I'm gonna have to fix that."

The night that Adam and Belle stole the royal four they didn't just steal their youth they stole the youth of a young man who had such a bright future ahead of him. They stole his light and fire, He wanted to be better then he was in the past and he would have been if not for them. his heart was no longer bright no it was an abyss his

heart grew dark. They solidified their future in dark marble by trying so had to be right. when Karma finally came for them Varian would smile and cheer on the little devils that did it not knowing all was not as it seemed.

This chapter was not planned it was spontaneous, I have no idea I wrote a scene with Varian and though 'hmm he hasn't been in this book yet I think we need back story' and Voilà chapter about our favorite awkward alchemist. I promise the next chapter will not be a flashback now I need to go study for a math test wish me luck I'll need It

@TheMoonLark15 hope I didn't break your heart to much.

~DarkVixen

Chapter Eighteen

[image]

Ella woke up and was still tired, she had no idea why but sucked it up and got out of bed. She looked around at her surroundings confused for a moment before the events of the previous day came rushing back to her. She grinned evilly, *'happy'* the voice in her head asked.

"Very much" She snarked out loud. She got dressed, placing on her crown before taking Jay's out of the case then walking across the hall to his room. She almost knocked, "what the heck are you doing."

'He's a boy, that's not nice, it's just sense. We're a monster not an idiot' Ella shrugged and did as told.

"Give me a sec."

"Ella Hun" She whipped around and saw a smiling Rapunzel and Eugene. black Auras around them smokey tendrils reaching out attaching to her wrist but only she could see them. "Oh I'm so happy you're home." Rapunzel wrapped her daughter up in a hug, she didn't hug back she just stood there arms pinned to her sides.

'You tricked them all by yourself. Are you proud of yourself yet?'

~Flashback to family day~

"CJ needs to touch this up." Aaron said running a hand through his hair, Ella's fist tightened. She snapped discreetly under the table and a black spark flew from her finger towards the Hook. He scooped his hat back up and placed it back on his head, she stamped her foot a bit and a jolt of unnoticeable black energy ran across the ground and up Aarons leg, to his spin and around the crown of his head where his hat was covering.

"If you ever see her again." Jazzy barked. It seemed that no one had

seen the little light show well except for one. Her little brother's eyes darted to her quickly then back to their birth parents. He always had a problem with her controlling people.

"Whose CJ?" Eric asked.

"My sister, I got two, a younger and an older and an older brother."

~~~

"We don't plan on releasing the actual villains, That's messed up but we do plan on releasing their kids and maybe a select few villains who have learned their lesson ya know, Facilair, Smee, madam Mim. but doing that involves taking Ben's place."

"Really dropping Ben, but he's a good kid working on change." Ariel said solemnly.

"We've seen it all before." Jay Growled, "A preach of change only to do the bare minimum." he scoffed, "he'll bring us over bask in the glory and leave everyone else to rot."

"It always happens, like Ryder said, as long as a beast is on the throne Adam has power, and he was a terrible ruler." Aaron said tugging at his coat sleeve. "But um it would also involve taking the reins of the four kingdoms, establishing peace, trade, proper divisions, Equal control, and blurred borderlines." Ella dismissed her boyfriend.

Ella could see the looks of uncertainty, She had no bond with them she couldn't reach them without touching them. She crossed her legs and bounced her foot were she was wearing black platform sandals she aimed her foot and lightly tapped Rapunzel who was closest to her, on the leg, and nodded to Jazzy who managed to tap the exposed part on Jasmine's ankle And with Jasmine holding on to her husband and son all three of them were corrupted. Rapunzel held her husband, Eugene placed a comforting hand on Eric who held his wife who was comforting their daughter. It was like an Airborne virus spreading quickly and everywhere, that's the beauty of black magic and Ella loved it
~~~

"They're right about Adam," Aziz added. Only Ella could see the black cloud circling his back

They all shared a look, "Well" Eugene smiled, "Sometimes you have to leave it to the kids." This one was more personal, black tendrils of magic attached to her fingers, a puppet, her puppet.

~~~ End of flashback~~~

'Yes I'm very proud of myself' She told the voice in her head Before wrapping her arms around her mom and dad.

Jay opened the door and smiled at his girlfriend's face, she looked more content then she ever was. But he noticed her flinching and her face quickly hardened. "Jay" He smiled as she pulled herself away from her mom and dad and to Jay, "Thanks for the..." She struggled, "hug. But we have things to do."

Jay saw a black hue over take their eyes for a split second before they nodded, "Of course dearest." Eugene said to his daughter, blinking twice before moving off down the hall.

"Did you see that?" Jay asked when they were out of ear shot.

"See what." She asked, tilting her head innocently.

"Their eyes kind of changed colors for a second."

Ella's eyes widened, he wasn't supposed to see that at all. She wasn't even sure how he could, *'a close bond, you're more attached to him then the others are to their partners, long exposure to your magic will allow him to see what he shouldn't. Distract him, get him back under wraps'* The voice in her head said quickly.

She giggled, "Oh Jay you must be a bit tired, or even if you did see something it probably had to do with their little run in years ago." she got to her tip toes and gave him a peck on the lips, "Kneel down so i can put this on for ya."

He does as told but still contemplates what he saw, Rapunzel and Eugene's run in had to do with the sun and moon stone which were yellow and blue not black. Rapunzel was disconnected and Eugene
~~~

never held that power.

Ella placed on his crown, "Come on we have work to be done." He nodded, allowing the thoughts to leave him for now and followed Ella to the conference room where they would wait for the others.

Ella drummed her bejeweled fingers on the table while waiting for their friends. "Ella?" The Blond raised an eyebrow annoyed at someone who's not her friends or parents addressing her so informally. She sees a young man with sharp features. He had hair much like Ryders, Black with a blue streak, and piercing blue eyes. He wore black leather gloves, thick leather boots, A pair of goggles on his head, and a long coat over a pair of slacks and a blue t-shirt.

Her eyes flashed for a moment, "Varian? Uncle Varian?" she asked, almost unsure. He gave her a small smile and a nod not expecting what came next. "Of course they let you stay." She let out a bitter laugh.

"Huh?"

"Don't give me that." She hissed, "You betrayed Rap-" *Mom!* "Mom and they let you stay here. I had magic and the world went crazy!" Her glare burned holes into his soul, he saw her eyes run black and Jay backed up a bit. The black in her hair over taking the blond.

The alchemist tried to step forward, "I wouldn't do that." Jay whispered, It wouldn't have mattered either way Blood was pounding in Ella's ears she couldn't hear her boyfriend. All she could hear was the voice in her head telling her to get it together. Her hair and eye fell black much like what he remembered of Rapunzel years ago.

Varian Didn't listen. He dropped his bag and slowly walked towards her, "Hey Ella it's just me, I can understand why you're mad. I am too. You had no idea what I went though trying to get you back from the isle." He whispers the end to himself.

Ella's eyes dimmed back to green as she looked at Varian, "What?"

"I tried for so long to bring you home." He placed a hand on her

shoulder flinching away as his leather glove melted off like it did with Rapunzel, she was so much like her mother. "I did everything I could but I didn't dabble in magic, I worked with what I had and could never get it right." Ella's hard fell back to its blond and black state. Varian made a move to hold her hands and kneeled in front of her, "I almost got myself thrown on the isle just so you didn't have to be alone. Cass stopped me." For the first time in all the time Jay knew his girl he saw Ella cry.

And it wasn't a single tear with no expression, I was full on sobs with tears streaming like a river down her cheeks. She buried her Head In Varian's shoulder and continued crying. Yeah Ben had brought them over but no one had, or at least admitted, to actively try and bring her home for over a decade. Sure it would have been nice or even easy to write it off as a lie but Ella could detect lies not by power but by simply being and Isle kid and Varian wasn't lying. It honestly relieved and terrified her all at the same time, she didn't know how to react.

Jay watched jaw dropped at Ella and her godfather. Then he looked at Ella's hair and it was fading from Black to blond slowly, *'What the actual Hell are you doing Let go of him your ruining the whole plan you idiot'* he heard a voice hiss. He looked around but no one was there he noticed Ella flinched but passed it off as another sob it was something small, something you wouldn't notice unless you were an isle kid. Flinching and covering it up was a thing every kid on the isle of the lost knew how to do. No one could recognize Ella flinching except Jay.

Ella had made her first mistake at 13 when she opened up to Jay completely free of outside influence. Her raw insanity shining though. But what made him all in love was her complete trust in him to know her weaknesses. He could recognize her pain anywhere.

She was in so much pain but there seemed to be no source and it not like he could just out right ask her that would get him in a lot of trouble. The others would always tease them saying that Ella's punishments were probably light and definitely not PG. They were but not in the way the others teased him. Ella seemed to be possessed by the spirit of Wednesday Addams on a bad day when

she punished him and the levels of such varied. "I'm gonna let you two talk." he smiled softly, "I'll tell the others to postpone." Ella flinched again using the open window as an excuse to turn it into a shiver and nod.

'Oh no you don't tell him to get back her what the hell, Jay if you don't I will come out there'.

'We made a deal get you ass back inside'

As soon as Jay was out of ear and eye shot he darted off, was back in his room pacing trying to contemplate what he had heard but, but he was having trouble. He forcefully pulled off his jacket and the crown Ella placed on his head even harder. He yanked his hair out of a bun and suddenly an idea flowed into his mind.

He knew Ella had taken some of her books when they left the isle. He rushed across the hall to her room and rifled through what little things she brought with them to Corona. He knew if he would find an answer to the voice and her alternating hair colors it would be within her own stuff. Ella always kept her card close to her chest or in this case books close to her head. He noticed an imperfection in the headboard, something that was so unlike Ella not to notice and fix immediately. He knocked on the imperfection lightly and away from it, noticing one solid sound and one hollow sound.

He pried the headboard open and found Her books. He used what little magic he had to duplicate them and took them with him back to his room and disguised them as playbooks and textbooks. "I'm doing this to help her" he reassured himself, pulling out his phone and texting them in the VAK group chat that the meeting was postponed.

He pulled out ***Archetype to the dark Magic and spells*** "This looks like a good place to start." He placed his hand on the cover "it's all to help, it's all to help." He hesitantly opened the book, feeling the presence of dark Magic in the room he felt it pour over him and whisper in his ear, they were ancient, wise and evil whispers. He immediately snapped the book closed before it could flood said room with the dangerous and deadly art form and before he could distinguished what they were telling him to do. How much Will

power did Ella actually have to resist these voices. If he could feel it he knew Ella would, the moment she stepped in his direction "I'm gonna need another place to do this."

The picture had nothing to do with the chapter i just thought it was cool

~DarkVixen

Chapter Nineteen

When Harry had docked in Tirulia a few days later, it gave Gil the opportunity to head to Agraba even if Jazzy didn't want to see him he wanted to see her. Besides even if he wasn't the smart pirate he knew that torturing Pan and the lost boys should be a family thing between the Hook kids.

Agraba was quite a hike away from where they docked in Trulia; he had to go all the way through Corona, "Gil?" he turned and saw Not only Jay but Ella out and about as well, Both sporting a crown. Although Jay's was much less extravagant then Ella's he looked like he was smiling but that there was something wrong.

"Hey Ella, Jay." He said cheerfully.

"Where are you headed, Agraba?" Jay asked Kindly no hit of malice in his voice. He nodded, "Let us give you a ride, We have to pass though anyway to get to Auradon."

'What the hell does he think he's doing!?' Ella shouted, Gil Flinched but noticed she didn't move her lips. "Is everything okay?" Ellas asked, twisting her wrist. Gil saw a long black Thread attached to his own wrist and by the looks of it Jay saw it to but kept quiet.

"Yeah" he nodded, not giving anything away. "Just a lot of excitement the last couple of days."

"No kidding." Ella laughed Strangely, It was much different then it had been before. Being attached to Jazzy had given Gil a window, an in, a way to read others. She taught him how to interpret body language, how to read others, and how to hide himself. No matter what Ella did she was kind of useless for the most part on the Isle. Jazzy did it in all good intentions trying to keep him from getting yelled at. She too, Much like Ryder, was none the wiser to the mistakes that would lead to her downfall.

He had known Ella since they were little kids, they went to dragon hall together and he was a useful lackey. And she actually seemed to like him and then she made her deal with Uma, So all in all he would call her a friend even if she didn't call him that. He could tell the difference in her laugh. It wasn't as cold and dangerous as it once was. It was strangled and tired like she was trying to keep her grasp on things tight and it was slipping.

"You never answered, you want a ride?" Jay asked.

"Uh yeah sure." he noticed that while he was trying to answer Ella moved her wrist counter clockwise and when he was done she scrunched her hand up in a fist so hard it shook. Gil Climbed in the back of the car as Jay got in the driver's seat.

"I'm gonna sit in the back with Gil, to catch up."

Jay's eyes widened in panic, "Are you sure you don't wann-"

"I'm sure Jay!" He shrunk back and nodded

She climbed in after Gil and waited till they were moving. She drew a circle in the air and muttered, "although your very near let our conversation fall upon death ears" small sparks were sent as Jay. "Why are you going to see Jazzy?"

Gil tensed, "I just wanna hang out and be friends again I get if she doesn't want to though."

The blond hummed and looked at her blood red nails. *'Help! Gil! Come on please.'* he heard a strained voice say. It sounded vaguely like Ella. but no Ella never sounded so distressed, so in need of help, so broken. 'Gil please, you're smart, just think for one second.' and she would never compliment him.

"You will forget everything you heard in this car." She told gill still looking at her nails, fixing the imperfections. She threw one leg over the other kicking him slightly with her black mary janes. Her torn leggings and black dress, while giving off the impression of a princess, showed him she was all Isle, if even that. She seemed so much more sinister than all of them, even her own comrades. The

dagger in a holster peeking out from under her dress was proof enough "You will say nothing to anyone, and even an inkling of doubt will lead to a depletion of one in the pirate crew. And wouldn't want that right?" she finally looked at him and smiled. He looked in her eyes and just saw pure pain and agony.

He nodded hiding every ounce of fear. There was no use lying to Ella; she was like a bloodhound and could sniff them out "Right."

"Good boy" She patted him on the arm. "If i would have known you would be this strong i would have tried something else." she mumbled though she was still clearly talking to Gil.

He still didn't understand the voice but one thing was clear, Ella was trapped in her own head. Whether literally or figuratively he has yet to find out.

"What's in the bag?" she asked lifting her spell on Jay.

"Oh yeah I forgot." He opened the cat carrier like bag.

She Gasped loudly and took the fluffy animal from Gil "Vera!" She hugged the Raccoon. Vera was still young so she was still relatively small.

"Harry figured you'd want her back now that you're away from your dad, Though the crew wasn't very happy with giving up their mascot."

Ella's eyes shined in delight, joy lighting up her features, a soft smile gracing her lips, he black streaks in her hair fading a bit. It was so odd. The way she handled this animal was more gentle and calm then she ever held Jay.

Agraba was much closer by car. Jay stopped and Ella and Gil Climbed out, "Thank you so much Gil." She gave him a quick hug.

"'Course" He looked behind her hat Jay who was leaning his head against the steering wheel a sad look in his eyes as he looked at Vera. "Hey if I say something would you like stab me?"

"Depends," she said, swaying back and forth.

"Its about Jay."

She froze and a dark look over took her, "What about him."

He bit his lip, "You kinda treat him like, well how Uma treated me."

Ella flinched, "No I don't treat Jay Just as any girlfriend should."

"Uma doesn't treat Ryder like that," her fist clenched. "And Evie said she really does love him. Look at Jay once and a while, he looks trapped and look at Ryder he looks so happy. Jazzy never treated me like that and I was so happy. I'm just saying, I know you love Jay, maybe be a little nicer to him."

"But Mam."

"Don't worry about Gothel, She teaches selfishness. You can't be that in a relationship. You have to give some too."

She looked conflicted and angry. "I'll think about it. Thanks again Gil" She walked around and got in the passenger's seat. Gil's words rang in her head the whole way to Auradon. He was right in a way, she did truly love Jay and she had no clue what she would do if he left. She didn't want to give him any reason to she loved him so much. Plans be damned he was so much more to her then a means to her end.

They were cut off as Jay stopped short and making Ella lurch forward and back again slamming her head in the seat. "Oh gods Ella I'm so sorry." She looked at Jay and realized Gil was right, Jay was absolutely terrified of her even though what he just did was the fault of the Ak's running away from Celia, Dizzy and Quest.

"It's not your fault, she said softly. She placed a hand on his cheek and kissed his forehead. She Growled and Got out of the car.

He raised an eyebrow and looked at Vera, "did you expect that?"

The three kids shivered in fear. "Sorry Queen Ella." She didn't say anything, just shot out a spark next to them which wrapped around the ones they were chasing. Ropes wrapped around their ankles dropping Ally, and Jorden to the ground. And just for extra measure

she bound Jordens magic.

"Have at them and stay out of the street." she didn't wait for an answer and got back in the car. Jay was in a wrey mood The rest of the day, that wasn't typical Ella behavior but her hair was back to vibrant black color.

He told her he was going to get in some quiet time and without issues she agreed she didn't even Check is bag. Vera jumped on him like dog. "Looks like she wants to come with you." Ella laughed.

He had read about a meadow that that Golden Apple trees, Silver Barriers and Magic flowers. It was the epitome of Goodness magic, maybe even the epicenter according to the myth. Many believed that the meadow is where magic started and all that existed in the beginning was good. It was said this is where creatures would come to be blessed with their magic at the beginning.

If anywhere could balance out the darkness in her book it was here. He sat in the middle of the meadow placing Vera next to him and apologized to the fields. "Forgive me but I need to save her."

A shimmer ran over the field expecting Jay's unselfish desires. He opened up ***'Archetype to the dark Magic and spells'*** and '***A Beginners Guide to the dark dimension'*** he laid them out in front of them and hesitantly opened the books bracing himself for the whisperers and painful magic. Neither came. He sighed in relief "Ready to help Ella," He asked Vera who he swore nodded and would continue to swear to his whole life. He started reading, doing anything he could to save Ella. Even if it meant combing through hours of voodoo lessons and necromancy, even if it meant seeing the horrific diagrams, even if it meant that he now knew how to kill a god and disintegrate a pixies wings from up to a thousand feet.

He had one goal, and only one. Help Ella.

"Mind if I join?" He looked up and saw Uma.

Her eyes were wide with fear and a hunting shout was ringing in her ears.

I spelled it Mam on purpose that's How Ella says it.
~DarkVixen

Chapter Twenty

Gil made his way to Jazzy, that was all that was on his mind, Jazzy. As soon as he got to the palace, he walked straight in. There were no guards posted yet, so he had no problems.

He walked through the endless maze of hallways getting lost and fully accidentally finding Carlos and Jazzy. They were sitting behind a desk with a fairy in a jar. Jazzy was sitting sideways on the chair with her feet over Carlos. He ran his hand up and down her shin as they spoke "Jazzy I don't know how to break the spell on top of the jar could you please."

"She'll try to use her magic Caros and I'm not sure I could hold her long enough to do the selective bodily control."

Carlos' face was dull, "Seriously Jazzy, you're probably the most powerful of the royal four."

She giggled, "oh you are such a charmer aren't you Carlos De vil" she ruffled his hair. "Don't let Ella Bella hear you say that."

Wow Gil hadn't heard that nickname for Ella in a long time. "Gil?" He saw Carlos looking at him through the crack in the door.

He hesitated and thought about running the other way but ultimately decided on opening the door, "Hey um I can leave or come back if you're busy."

Jazzy just stared at him, her face was blank, but he could see the panic in her eyes. "Carlos give me the jar," she demanded. He reached his arm over her leg and slid her the Jar.

Jazzy stood and took a voodoo doll out of the back of her chair; it was in a blue dress and looked exactly like the fairy. She cast a spell to make the doll stiff and not move and immediately the fairy did the same.

She opened the jar plucking the fairy up from the back of her dress and sat her on the table. She pulled a pin out of her desk and beckoned Carlos closer. She pulled a chain out from under the collar of his shirt and opened what looked like a small cylinder locket. She tapped the top letting a soft blue Aura alight from it. Inside was some kind of purple liquid. She dipped the needle inside, then opened her own ring with sharp purple magic and dipped the needle in the blue liquid inside. She pricked the fairy's finger and put everything back in order.

She took her spell off the doll and effectively the fairy before making her normal sized again, "Selective bodily control." She said before the fairy could ask. "You are now physically incapable of hurting us, can't even think about it. Now go with Carlos. I have something to take care of." She said, drawing her eyes back towards Gil.

Carlos grabbed Jane's hand pulling her from the room, "hey let go of me!" She snapped.

"I saved you the least you could do is be a little grateful, Hera knows what they're doing to Audrey right now." Carlos grumbled pulling Jane along, keeping her mouth shut after that.

"Hey" Jazzy said with a smirk.

Gil's cheeks immediately heated up. He wasn't the average Villain kid; he wasn't overly mad about anything and didn't really hate anyone. That being Said he desperately hated Jazzy. He hated her smile, her voice, her little quirks, He hated how passionate she was about Her magic and how she treated it like an art form. The way she made him feel, He hated that he actually really liked her. Jazzy was evil but not like they all were. He liked her and she knew it, so she played an intricate game of soccer, and his feelings were the ball, and she knew that very well.

Even long after they stopped hanging out back on the isle Jazzy made it her personal mission to make him feel bad for being interested in anyone and make him feel like she was the prize at the end of suffering. Although he was thankful, she wasn't Ella.

The blond was Probably his best friend in the whole world, but she was mean. She liked Playing with her prey. She likes leading people on and letting Jay handle them later. It was her game, her entertainment. It was a form of pain and suffering that kept her hands clean. So, Ella could honestly say, 'I've never hurt anyone in cold blood' and technically it was true.

Ella played dangerous games with one's heart and mind, The psychological states of the isle kids were Ella's favorite toys. Weirdly enough Ella never toyed with Gil.

"Hey" he whispered back, "Um I wanted to see how things were besides the obvious victory." He averted his gaze and scratched the back of his neck.

"Everything's quite well actually." She grinned kicking her Boots up on the table playing with her bracelets. The purple in her hair was slightly faded and she was smiling. It was different then he was used to, it was a sweet sincere smile. It wasn't crazed and alight with the blood lust for his brothers. He could see the princess that once walked these halls, not the villain that was bathed in the strobing lights of the Sinister Society every Thursday.

He nodded, "Oh well that's good. um I'm just gonna-"

"You can stay if you want." She said before he could move.

He was startled, "You have Carlos I'm just kinda extra ya know."

"I'm sure he wouldn't mind." She grinned.

He stammered while blushing madly, "I can't leave Harry alone."

"He's planning to head over to Neverland with Aaron right." she swung her feet down and in second was right in front of him. "That's a family thing." she reached up and undid the knot in the back of his bandana so she could play with his hair. It was a trait he knew Jazzy did a lot, he loved playing with her item of affections hair. Gil never understood why. "Just stay here till he gets back." she moved him to a seat across from her own and sat on the arm of the chair. "Then you can go and you're always welcome back.

Yeah?"

"Yeah." Gil smiled without thinking.

~~~

Carlos Dragged Jane from the room, "hey let go of me!" She snapped.

"I saved you the least you could do is be a little grateful, Hera knows what they're doing to Audrey right now." Carlos grumbled pulling Jane along, keeping her mouth shut after that.

She didn't speak again until they were far away from Jazzy, Carlos had led her to the kitchens to get something to eat, as she had been in that jar much longer than he anticipated. "Why did you save me?" she asked as Carlos pushed a sandwich to her, sitting down with his own.

"You were nice enough to me, and I didn't really make any friends there." he said the last part lowly. "I just wanted a friend; I don't exactly want to spend all my time with Jazzy."

"But she's your girlfriend." Jane said biting into her sandwich like it was the greatest thing ever.

He shook his head, "not exactly." and he told her his whole sad sorry tale. Getting picked up by the royal four, his encounters and closeness with Ryder, getting picked by Jazzy, even his fear of Ella. "So, she's not really my girlfriend, it was more arranged than anything, a power play. She does act like it sometimes and I'm grateful for that but there's always that little voice in the back of my head telling me it's all a play. I just really want a friend."

Jan understood, she got that when everyone had been her friend after Mal fixed her hair. He placed her hand on top of his, "I'll be your friend, I don't understand all this Prophecy stuff and I'm not big on Magic in the long run. Heck I couldn't even control my own mother's wand." Carlos Chuckled with her, "But I can tell that none of this was really your fault, you're terrified of who should be your friends. You've never managed to make friends on your own
~~~

without something intervening, So I'll be your first friend."

He smiled, "Thanks Jane, something tells me we're going to need all the friends we can get soon. I don't know why but I feel like something's coming." he looked out the window at the beautiful scenery of Agradba. Jan did as well and she felt it too, the calm before the storm, The question was, what kind of storm would it be.

Let's see how many chapters I can get to you before Christmas, I want to do at least to more, one will be on Christmas Eve as your present. so Merry Christmas, Happy Kwanzaa, Happy Yule, I know I missed Hanukkah but Happy Hanukkah as well, Happy New years and Happy Holidays in genral. we're in the home stretch to 2022, let's make it better than 2021.
~DarkVixen

Chapter Twenty-One

Evie Kicked her legs back and forth on the desk as she watched Aaron Place both Lonnie and Doug under selective Body control. "I don't see the point of this." Lonnie growled. "You took us all down easily, why do you need to do this?"

"When we are awake, we're formidable but you will be here even when we are weak. No need for you to try to murder me in my sleep." He smirked getting in her face.

"Don't Tempt me." She sneered back.

"Try it warrior."

Doug was uncomfortable; he had no clue why Evie had dragged him out of all the people here. Not to mention that Aaron clearly didn't want him near her.

Aaron was unlike Ryder and Jazzy in many ways. He was clearly very infatuated with Evie. Not in Love, Jay was in love with Ella, Ella was in love with Jay. Uma and Ryder were in love. Aaron was just infatuated; he wanted all her attention on him, but he knew Ellas rules. That couldn't happen, they needed to be preoccupied. He would shower her with expenses, gifts and Jewelry in the months to come to keep her under his thumb.

None of this would stop her absolute fear of Aaron. Evie loved the attention, but he scared the heck out of her. Aaron has yelled at her

and has hurt her, whether he knew it or not.

"Are you Happy, my love?" He asked the bluenette who was preoccupied with a cupcake. She looked up licking the frosting off her lips and nodded with a smile. Aaron liked when she was simple and agreeable. He kissed her temple, pulled off her crown and pushed Doug towards her.

She giggled, pulling him out of the room. As soon as they were far enough, she stopped giggling and her face fell. Doug couldn't take the silence, "I'm sorry."

She whipped around confused, "what are you sorry for?"

"Not standing up for you on family day. I should have, instead I was too scared of Chad to do anything."

Evie sighed, "after all this I think I should apologize to you. I basically kidnapped you and forced you away from your family." She looked down, tears glistening in her eyes.

He looked over and made a brave yet stupid move. He pulled them to a stop and picked up her chin and turned her face towards him. "Hey, I don't blame you. If anything, I blame Aaron, Ryder, Jazzy and Ella. The four of you didn't look to happy on coronation day."

"I should be though. This is everything I should ever want," She said walking again, "My mother said all I needed to be happy was a prince, a crown, and beauty. I have all of that now, heck I have a king, but I'm not happy."

"You're not confident or satisfied and you can't really be happy without that. I see the way you let Aaron control you. You're so smart and strong but with him you're so compliant. You Deserve happiness just as much as him, Evie."

She rings her hands together, "I just feel like somethings wrong; it seems like things got worse as we got older. Something feels off, I just can't Explain it. And I wouldn't be too hard on them, you would be angry too if your entire existence and purpose was erased and replaced with a tale of evil and pain. Adam and Belle painted them

like the villains when they were just little kids."

Doug had to admit that what Adam and Belle did was cruel and unusual, and he knew that technically they only took one kingdom the others were theirs to begin with, the thrones were even offered to them by their parents. What Doug couldn't get over was the cruel treatment of the others that tried to help and be their friends.

"Ella was hurt most of all." Evie said sadly. "She was five, she remembers everything and so much of her life has been surrounded by the selfishness and vanity she was taught by Gothel and the need to rule she was taught by Hans."

Doug knew there was more to the story and more he needed to find out, but he couldn't do that with the body control Aaron used on him.

Evie stopped and smiled, "Doug Welcome to the great library of Tirulia." She pushed the doors open to show a massive library, so massive it looked like at least one of every book ever published lived here. "I'm gonna figure out how to undo the body control. We'll figure out what to do from there but first this needs to be done."

"But i can't do that unless-"

"It only affects you if you want to hurt them or overthrow them, this is for personal freedom. Come on." she grabbed his arms and pulled him in, letting the massive golden doors slam behind them.

~~~

Aaron walked around his desk as Evie's giggles died out. He leaned back in his chair and rubbed his eyes before gazing over at Lonnie who was on guard in the corner. "You know you can sit right?" She just glared at him, "Fine stand all you want. Doesn't change much for me." He turned his attention back to his computer.

"Why?" Lonnie asked, still huddled in the corner.

"That question can lead to any answer." he said without looking up, "I could tell you why I overthrew a kingdom, or I can tell you why
~~~

my socks are red. You have to be more specific love." his pirate accent was prominent replacing the accent-less voice he paraded around before ethe coronation; he was no longer trying to hide the effects of the Isle at least not as much.

"Why take over what do you gain from causing pain." She sneered,

It had no effect on him as he looked up, "it makes me feel better," he stood and walked to the window. "Causing pain to the people who gave me so much of it. If they are in deep pain, if they are so unbearably uncomfortable then they are weaker than me. A mere three-year-old who was taken from his home in the life of luxury and tossed on to the dinghy isle with nothing but the clothes on my back."

Lonnie moved forward into the seat but still scooted it away, "Why hurt people who did nothing to you."

"Revenge for my parents. If I can make Ben's parents feel how my parents did, I feel accomplished. Call me petty, I was raised by Hook." he said with a bored look.

Lonnie looked at the broken boy in front of her, the boy that managed to grab hold of the crown. He was just a boy just like she was just a girl, but he had faced so many hardships and broken promises. "Why did you take me away from my parents then?"

That took him longer to answer. "I guess it's because I spent my life surrounded by Pirates and Villains and evil plots that I never understood goodness. I never understood happiness just for the sake of Happiness. I guess I really just want someone to explain how that works. And you specifically, I want to understand how a typical non-royal mother works."

She tilted her head, "You don't know how mothers work?"

He shook his head, "Gothel is the only mother in our friend group. Not exactly mother of the year." he rolled his eyes. "I just wanna understand, I guess." Lonnie could see that there was more going on beyond the surface, but she wasn't sure what. Aaron was unhinged and off of it almost all the time the idea that he was one of the

masterminds that overthrew a kingdom, well it was actually totally believable as he was basically a genius. But Auradon was taken over by Children, eight children, only four of them planning for this all their lives. There was something else going on.

She was snapped out of her thoughts by a yell, well three yells, "AARON!" she jumped in her seat and snapped towards the door and saw Three Pirates all in long red coats, two with black hair and one blonde.

"Harriet! Harry! CJ!" Aaron Grins like a mad man and runs to his sisters and Brother. And just like that his mood switched, he was smiling and laughing with his siblings. He was so caring with CJ, such a goof with Harriet, and he loved Hanging off his older brother Harry. He basically looked up to him like a role model. At the end of the day, it seemed Aaron was just a kid looking for his brother and sisters' approval, for them to praise him and tell him he did good cause no one else will. He didn't hurt them or insult them; no, he quite possibly loved his siblings.

Lonnie thought that maybe just maybe there was good in him, it was just buried beneath over a decade of trauma. And just maybe she could help dig it out.

She scrunched up her brows as she heard a small scream that sounded like it was echoing far off, *"Help! Please Someone Help me!"* by the startled look on Harry's face he had heard it too.

Let's see if I can get one more out for Christmas eve tomorrow as a Christmas/ Yule present for you all if I don't I apologize...my hands are covered in tape and wrapping paper, there are pine needles are in my hair and Glitter in my eyes. Besides that, I promise now that we've taken a look at how all the of the eight, Pirates and Ak's are settling into the new world order a lot is gonna happen and more is going to be reveled and caught on. its gonna get really weird from here on out. none of this comes from descendants or anyone else its purely from my demented head.
Also, more songs on the way I swear, I can't wait to get to writing some more especially since I have a few awesome Villain songs saved to my YouTube music playlist for this

~DarkVixen

Chapter Twenty-two

[image] [image]

Mal and Uma had become extremely close during the month that had passed since the coronation. The inability to see her friends often had absolutely killed Mal but Uma was her savoir. Giving her a girl friend to talk to and Advice when she needed it. Uma was insanely politically inclined. So much so that Mal joked that she should be on the throne instead of her.

"Wanna go scare the heck out of Belle and Adam again?" Uma asked, fishing a cookie out of the jar that sat between the two of them on the bed in Mal's huge room.

Her eyes grew wide, she grinned her fangs on full display and she nodded as they darted out of the room, "Whoa hold on Girls." Ryder said, catching Uma by the waist the moment they left the room. Mal bumped into Uma who was caught by Ben who was coming to see the girls.

Ben had Gotten into a grove of sorts, he understood that he couldn't hurt Ryder and Uma, He also really did love Mal and the only way he would walk free was if he complied. He did all of this, left Ryder alone, hung out with Mal and Uma and didn't disturb the royals locked up and he was allowed to pretty much do whatever he wanted. And he couldn't doubt that Ryder was born to lead, he knew what he was doing. Within weeks every VK that had moved to Auradon was In classes, had housing, and actually happy. The only run in was day one, when they were destroying everything, and Audrey and Chad had been placed on Clean up duty that day.

"Belle and Beast are getting relocated today, just called in a favor."

There was a loud clap and down the hall walked all four of the Hook siblings, all of them with wild hair sporting red leathered long flowing coats, calf high boots, swords and scabbards and hooks either attached to their belts or in their hands.

Harry had been the one to clap before taking his hook back off his belt, "Ey Lassie," He chuckled.

Uma grinned like a schoolgirl bouncing on her feet before basically throwing herself at Harry. "ey what about the rest of us?" CJ whined

"Oh, don't think I forgot about you Calista."

She let out a small scream, "Oi how dare ye use me real name." She growled playfully, jumping on Umas' back.

Harry caught Mal's eye for once nothing was covering her hand letting the small Hook tattoo show. "'Ello Mal." he smiled hesitantly.

Mal looked at him and saw him switch the hands in which he held his hook. His glove only had two half fingers; the rest were bare allowing you to see the double dragon heart tattoo on his. She smiled back, "Hey Harry." no maliciousness, no jealousy just pure relief. Maybe they could be friends this time around.

"Why'd you call these dopes to relocate the crazies." Uma was then promptly nuggied by Harriet.

"If anyone 'an hold ' em down is Harry and Aaron."

"And we're just the ones to scare 'em." CJ added. The small girl giggled as her Big sister pulled her off Uma's back and let her fall to the floor.

Ben looked very worried and anxious. "Don't worry *Princelin*" Harry laughed, purposely taunting the lack of rank ben now held, "Well be relatively gentle."

"Suffice it to say we won't rough them up beyond recognition." Aaron laughed with his brother.

"Good they need to be recognizable on the island." Ella said, walking forward with Jay next to her.

He looked more timid and less regal then unusual but no one except Uma seemed to notice as they were all way more concerned about the situation at hand. "The Isle!?" Mal freaked.

"No neverland" Jazzy said, coming up rolling her eyes. "Yes, the isle. We said we had a plan for them."

"All the villains are still there! They'll get torn apart!" Ben Snapped as the Hook Siblings scurried down to the dungeons.

"Oh, we're counting on it." Ella grinned like a mad woman. "I'm gonna cast a similar spell that they did on the villains, and I had a conversation with Hades, he was more than happy to help. If they die and they'll just come back, just so they can be punished again. It's exactly what they did to the villains. A taste of their own medicine." she giggled so madly it would have made the mad hatter jealous.

Evie's eyes widened, "You're gonna put Belle on the same Island as Gaston, the same man that was trying to push himself on her." Ben's eyes widened in terror.

Ryder looked at Evie like she was insane, "Eve were Evil not monsters. We'll cast something so he stays away from her."

"We'll I am a monster, just not that kind of monster." Ella shrugged.

Not even a moment later Aaron walked up holding Adam in chains with Harriet holding a sword to his back, and Harry, with a bloody nose, walking Belle who had a slash on her forehead clearly caused by a hook, with CJ holding a sword to her back. "Good work Guys that was faster than I anticipated." Ryder smiled. "And it looks like he only got one hit in."

"Nay that was 'er" Harry groaned, "Got me with 'er 'eel as we got em out,"

"She was ready for us. He was not," Aaron said rubbing the newly blooming bruise on his head, "Must have to do with years of getting Gaston off of her."

"The car to take them to the Isle is out front, come back, get your payment, we have a meeting and then Aaron can head off with you to neverland."

Adam jumped, making Harriet push the sword father in her back,

"The isle we don't belong there that's where the Villains are." He spat, "at least we're they're supposed to be." he eyed the royal four up and down.

Ella tilted her head, "Am I the Villain of your story while you are the strong broken royals?" She asked amused, 'Cause in mine you're the villains and I was the helpless princess stolen from her bed at five years old. In the end all that matters in who holds the crown and who they say is evil. I won; I'll write history now. And my ruling says you're the ones who deserve punishment, not me, not Ryder, or Jazzy, or Aaron, or Mal, Evie, Jay or Carlos, not even Uma, Gil and the Hook's."

"You may have given them life, by bringing their parents back," Jazzy said, ringing her hands together, "But you also took their lives by allowing them to be birthed in prison, never to see the light of day and to never be loved."

"At that point, we would have rather never been born." Harriet said bitterly.

Belle finally took a look at the lives they had ruined, No the children whose lives they had ruined. They could have saved them, she could have saved them, she should have said something. She was all about giving second chances, that's what made her a queen, but she didn't even give these kids a first chance, she didn't even take a moment to think about a possible future for Ella, Ryder, Jazzy or Aaron. These children felt the need to take on the responsibility of ruling, risked their lives to change things because they had failed them, she had failed them. She Failed as a queen and a mother, because no mother would let any child suffer the way the twelve children in front of her hand, and she finally saw that as she was led into the car.

As the eight all filed into the meeting hall Mal stopped Ryder seeing the fear in Ben's eyes as his parents were led off, "Ryder Don't you think the isle is a bit extreme I mean they'll be killed."

"That's the point Mal, Death then back Death then back death then back, it's a taste of what they did to everyone else they deserve it."

"But that's just cruel and unusual."

"Exactly"

"But-"

"It's what Ella wants so it's what's Happening so just drop it, Mal!" He shouted so loud that it reverberated off the castle walls. His eyes took on a gold tint. He grabbed a fit full of Mal's hair and threw her to the ground. Ben and Uma came out just in time to see Mal smack her head on the cobblestone and let out a small scream.

Uma looked at him with Wide eyes and Ben was just Horrified The two ran over to the fairy and kneeled beside her. Ryder stumbled back clutching his head, his eyes flashing gold and blue repeatedly, stopping on the blue.

"I'm sorry" he gasped out, eyes still shining blue.

Ella looked out into the hallway, noticing that all of their eyes took on a dim blue color. Her eyes widened hearing the words that fell from her brother's lips.

He helped her up, and hugged her, "I'm so sorry I have no idea what happened." He blinked rapidly and genuinely looked confused and worried. He drew a circle around the cut on her head and healed it. He apologized profusely as he led her into the meeting.

Ella grabbed her brother by the collar and pulled her brother to her height, "Stay after for a bit." he nodded looking back as the doors closed, the last thing he saw was Ben's disappointed look, which for some reason cut deeper than it should have, and what ripped out his **Dark Heart**, Uma's scared and worried look.

~~~

The meeting went by fairly fast, which after Jay excused himself to go gods know where, Uma just heard him muttering to himself about purity magic. Mal came out to Uma, Evie hugged her and headed towards her and claimed she had work to do. Carlos claimed he had to go back to Agraba to make sure Jane was okay.
~~~

Aaron walked out with Ella handing him a jar, "Your Payment." Inside was the Fairy godmother herself. "You get to take her to the fairy council, tell us how they rule her." She also handed him a sack of gold. He ran out to give Evie the keys to the car, which was probably a bad idea, and headed to neverland for the weekend. Jazzy came out soon after following Carlos.

"Are they gonna come out?" Uma asked.

"Give them a sec I'm sure everything is fine." Mal said still reeling from earlier.

"Are you sure!?" They heard Ella snap, The girls looked at each other and made a split-second decision to glance through the keyholes and listen.

"Yes I am." Ryder snapped back walking away from his sister.

She glared and grabbed him by the hair, "are you cause your reports have been slipping." The smaller girl stood on a chair, so she appeared taller than her baby brother. "Uma clouds your vision a lot."

He slapped her hand away, "You act like a Jay never clouded yours, you acted like a lovesick Puppy for years. And I'm Functioning more than you were."

"Jay was always part of the plan, and he gave me more to fight for." She clutched her bracelet. "The toys are for us to observe, and to keep our partners busy so they don't look at us so much, so they are distracted. Not so we're distracted."

"Yet Jay is allowed to walk free without one."

"Shut up what I do with my boyfriend is my business." Ryder sneered at his sister. "Just admit it, you're not all for this, your comfortable right here and won't keep going."

Uma looked at Mal, 'Keep going?' she mouthed.

Mal shrugged, 'he never told me.' she mouthed back.

"You're going soft, I heard you say sorry to Mal earlier. she pressed lips together and looked him up and down "you call yourself a Villain." she said in a taunting voice.

Ryder

♫I can hear the whispers in my sleep ♫
♫The voices telling me this should be mine ♫
♫You, you claim you trust me ♫ (He pointed at his sister)
♫You think I don't see the doubt behind your eyes ♫ (Ella looked away from him)

♫I'm gonna build me an empire ♫
♫And it's lonely at the top ♫
♫But madness and greatness ♫
♫Can both share a face ♫
♫And nobody will ever convince me to stop ♫

(He walked to the window and looked out with his arms behind his back)

♫It's my destiny ♫
♫I was born to play this game ♫
♫So, fear me or love me ♫
♫It's all the same ♫

Ella

♫Try to find a chain that I won't break ♫ (he looked back at her as she walked up next to him standing in the same position.)
♫A price I wouldn't pay for what I want ♫
♫So, you can call me calculating (**Ryder:** you can call me calculating) ♫
♫You can say I've lost my mind (**Ryder:** You can say I've lost my mind) ♫
♫You can throw me to the wolves, I'll be alright ♫

♫I'm gonna build me an empire ♫
♫And it's lonely at the top ♫
♫But madness and greatness ♫
♫Can both share a face ♫

♫And nobody will ever convince me to stop ♫ (She smiled like a mad woman)

♫It's my destiny ♫
♫I was born to play this game ♫
♫So, fear me or love me ♫
♫It's all the same ♫

Ryder

♫Just one word I'll let the world burn ♫

Ella
♫Just one word I'll let the world burn ♫

The fit bumped then clapped their hands together holding each other's hands in a firm grip. They just stared at each other for a moment as if having a silent conversation. Ella grins and Ryder right after

Both

♫We're gonna build us an empire ♫
♫And it's lonely at the top ♫
♫But madness and greatness ♫
♫Can both share a face ♫
♫And nobody will ever convince us to stop ♫

♫It's our destiny ♫
♫we were born to play this game ♫
♫So, fear us or love us ♫
♫It's all the same ♫
♫So, fear us or love us ♫
♫It's all the same ♫

"This isn't the end baby brother, The four kingdoms are just the beginning, there's a bigger prize at the end of this, we can't afford to go soft now." she heads back to the window with her hands behind her back.

"I understand big sister." he nodded, "can I still-"

"You can still keep Uma, but don't fall soft. Your body controlled her right?" Uma's eyes widened and she clamped a hand over her mouth. Mal placed a hand on her shoulder and glared at Ryder and Ella through the keyhole.

"Yes and thank you, sister." They saw Ryder walk towards the door and they shot off down the hall into Mal's room.

Ryder Popped his head in and looked to Uma, "Hey I'm a little tired, is it cool if I take a rain check on movie night."

"Yeah of course" she said, forcing a smile.

He walked in and kissed her temple, "thank you."

It wasn't until they were sure he was gone that they started talking. "What do you think Ella meant by 'The four kingdoms are just the beginning'?" Mal asked worriedly.

"I have no idea." Uma Admitted." She saw a picture of the four VK's tacked to Mal's wall. "But I think I know someone who might have some idea of what the heck is happening with the two." she turned back to Mal, "But I've got to be sure first."

~~~

When she heard Jay Mumbling about surety magic there was really only on place he could have gone. The meadow, the meadow that held Golden Apple trees, silver Barriers bushes and Magic flowers. The one with ponds of moon water and sun water It was the epitome of Goodness magic, maybe even the epicenter according to the myths. It was believed that the meadow is where magic started and all that existed in the beginning was good. It was said this is where creatures would come to be blessed with their magic at the beginning. Which made it the perfect place for ay to be looking for something dark and have the aura stamped down enough that Ella wouldn't find him, it was genius.

"Mind if I join?" Jay looked up after an hour of combing through every dark spell that ever existed and saw the sea witch spawn herself. Her eyes were wide with fear and Ryder's hunting shout at
~~~

Mal was ringing in her ears.

A nice long plot heavy chapter Merry Christmas , Happy Kwanzaa, Happy Yule, like I said before I know I missed Hanukkah but Happy Hanukkah as well, Happy New years and Happy Holidays in genral.

The pictures a little off but do you like it, how do you like the new cover, and the song choice; do you think it fits.

Stuffs finally picking up and it gonna spiral out of control very soon.

~DarkVixen

Chapter Twenty-three

[image]

Last time one DarkHearts~ *It was believed that the meadow is where magic started and all that existed in the beginning was good. It was said this is where creatures would come to be blessed with their magic at the beginning. Which made it the perfect place for Jay to be looking for something dark and have the aura stamped down enough that Ella wouldn't find him, it was genius.*

"Mind if I join?" Jay looked up after an hour of combing through every dark spell that ever existed and saw the sea witch spawn. Her eyes were wide with fear and Ryder's hunting shout at Mal was ringing in her ears.

~~~

Jay looked up at Uma, her eyes were wide, her face looked haunted yet determined. "What are you doing here?" he asked shakily, the last thing he needed was for her to run off and tell Ella what he was doing. He didn't want to believe he had been caught already; he had been so close.

"Same as you." She nodded down at the books in his lap. "I want to save someone I love."

Jay raised an eyebrow, "You noticed what was happening?" that got his attention, was what was happening to Ella happening to Ryder too?

"Somewhat. Tell me what you know, and I'll tell you what I know,"

He weighed his options. Either keep looking through this book and get more and more tired and not get anything more than 'the voice in her head' or tell Uma and possibly get more information. It didn't take long for him to decide, "I heard a voice coming from Ella. She wasn't talking, but it still sounded like her. And some of the things said were...disturbing to say the least. I saw small threads of black magic attaching to Eugene and Rapunzel and black Hues over
~~~

taking their eyes."

"Not sure about the black hues but I hear the voices coming from Ryder too." she said scratching the back of her neck and sat down beside him. "Jay, something bad is coming, Me and Mal eavesdropped on Ella and Ryder." Jay's eyes widened at the fact that she wasn't caught, killed or controlled. "she said the four kingdoms are just the beginning. I'm worried Ellas gonna start something bad. She already sent Fairy godmother to the fairy council for judgement."

Jay leaned back, shock and fear written all over his face. "If the fairy council rules her as guilty in any degree, they'll strip her of her magic and-"

"The only one who could stop Ella will be powerless." Uma confirmed. "I mean there's Hade."

Jay shook his head, "No he's on good terms with Ella, so much so that he agreed to help with her spell."

Uma deflated, "We need to find out what's going on." She picked up ***'A Paragon on Shadow Magic'***. "I need to help Ryder." she said, closing her eyes tight and clutching the book. A shimmer ran over the field accepting Uma's unselfish desires just like it did to Jay. She opened to the and hissed, dropping the book as it burned her.

"Yeah, you gotta be ready for anything that can come out of these." he held out his bloodied hands that were covered bites, scratches and slashes. "They're meant to train and teach and they're very...hands on." he flinched and picked a poisonous spider out of his hair. "You have magic right." She nodded, "Can you heal that before the poison gets too far in my system."

She nodded again and stood on her knees over his head placing a glowing purple hand over the bite, "Okay that's weird."

"What?"

She kneels back down, "My magic is supposed to be ocean blue." she said, holding out her purple hand.

"You know being prophetic can change your magic color."

She looked away from her hand and up at Jay, "You think I could be part of a prophecy."

"It's possible, but I'd have to check Ella's book. Sadly, that's the only one I can't find. I've turned over every stone and nothing." He shrugged sadly.

Uma squinted her eyes, "watch her for a couple of days to see if there's a special place for her in the castle or outside it. She wouldn't let that stray from her for long; she seemed attached to it."

"I'll look, Let's get back to these." Uma Encased her hands and picked up the book again.

~~~

Three houses later Uma's phone buzzed as she learned all the ways you could make someone's shadow kill them. It was Mal *'Can't stale much longer!! be back in 30 minutes!!'*

"I don't have much longer and we're no closer to figuring this out."

"Wait, I think I got it!" he grinned Uma leaned over, "A Mind mangle, it can turn even the purest hearts dark and get this It leaves a permanent physical mark ranging from brands to changes in hair color."

"Then that's it." Uma smiled, "How do we fix it."

"That's the problem, it varies from person to person and there's not much research on it." She threw her hands up in frustration, "And it gets worse."

"How could it possibly get worse."

He bit his lip, "It becomes permanent when the victim turns 18."

Her eyes widened, 'Jay, you gave Ella that ruby for her 17th birthday right."
~~~

"Yep"

"She's worn it for 10 months."

"Yep."

"This is not good."

"Yeah, no kidding, we have to figure out how to release her."

He went to stand but Uma pulled him back, "We can't fix her first, Ella's the ringleader, the other three will get suspicious if their leader is suddenly all soft and might catch on."

"So we need to fix the other three before we can fix Ella, the one that needs to be fixed as soon as possible." Jay looked ready to cry.

"We have to beat the clock." Uma said solemnly. "Were on a two-month time crunch.

"We should free Ryder first then he's the softest of the four." Uma didn't let her excitement show. She'll get to know the real Ryder. He could be open and honest. Then a wave of fear washed over her briefly, what if he didn't love her. "I'll need to do as much research as I can first of course."

She checked her phone, pushing away the thought and jumped up. "Speaking of, I have to beat the clock home before Ryder comes looking for me."

"Go, I'll clean this up," she nodded and started to run from the meadow. "Oh, and Uma." She turned back. "Thank you."

She smiled, "We'll fix this,"

He smiled sadly back but didn't answer, he wasn't as optimistic.

~~~

She made it to her room with just enough time to make it look like she came back from a long swim quickly spraying herself down in the shower. She walked out and followed the sound of a piano.
~~~

She saw Ryder sitting at a bench fiddling with the keys. He felt eyes on him and turned to see Uma learning in the doorway. He smiled and tapped the bench next to him.

She glided over and sat down like nothing had happened, hiding the burn on her hand. She and Jay had tried to heal it, but nothing would work, she would have to ask Mal.

She closed her eyes and swayed to the music. Suddenly Ryder started singing softly while looking at her

♫When she was younger, she would pretend♫
♫That her bedroom was a castle, ♫
♫she was fairest in the land♫

(She bowed her head remembering that she told him that. She did this when she was really young before her mother had broken her spirit. It was her way of coping with her horrible childhood. she was much like Evie as her mother had once lived the palace and thought her and her daughter deserved it all back.)

♫And she got older, ♫
♫and it all changed♫
♫There was no time for make-believe and all the magic slipped away♫

♫Until the light in her eyes, it was all but gone♫
♫'Cause all the dreams that she had turned out to be wrong♫

♫So, keep your head up princess 'fore your crown falls♫
♫Know these voices in your head will be your downfall♫

(She looked up trying to keep her emotions at bay from the phrase 'voices in your head')

♫I know it gets so hard, but you don't got far to go♫
♫Yeah, keep your head up princess, it's a long road♫
♫And the path leads right to where they won't go♫
♫I know it hurts right now but I know you'll make it home♫
♫So, keep your head up♫
♫Yeah, keep your head up♫

♫And now she's grown up,♫
♫works at a bar♫
♫She traded makeshift gowns for serving rounds from sunrise till it's dark♫
♫And all her friends got♫
♫someone to hold♫
♫And she's got no one there, ♫
♫still not prepared to make it on her own♫

(This was a jab at Ella for not allowing him to be totally with Uma before.)

♫And now the light in her eyes, it's now all but gone♫
♫'Cause all the dreams that she had turned out to be wrong♫

♫So, keep your head up princess 'fore your crown falls♫
♫Know these voices in your head will be your downfall♫
♫I know it gets so hard, but you don't got far to go♫
♫Yeah, keep your head up princess, it's a long road♫

♫And the path leads right to where they won't go♫
♫I know it hurts right now but I know you'll make it home♫
♫So, keep your head up♫
♫Yeah, keep your head up♫

♫One day you'll find your way back to the start♫
♫One day you'll live in your dreams♫
♫One day you'll wake up and girl you'll be a queen♫

(He kept playing with one hand as he reached out to place a hand on her cheek.)

♫So, keep your head up princess 'fore your crown falls♫
♫Know these voices in your head will be your downfall♫
♫I know it gets so hard, but you don't got far to go♫
♫Yeah, keep your head up princess, it's a long road♫

♫And the path leads right to where they won't go♫
♫I know it hurts right now but I know you'll make it home♫
♫So, keep your head up♫
♫Yeah, keep your head up♫

As soon as the song ended both leaned in and kissed slowly, all the thought Uma had before vanished, even if his mind was mangled there was no way this was fake or different from his reality. No, it couldn't be there was too much emotion behind it. "You're my queen," he said between kisses.

"How did you do that?" Uma asked as the pulled away, "I doubt Gothel or Hans taught you."

He smiled softly and leaned on her shoulder "I remember little things every now and then, I remember Mom sitting right here with me on her lap, and I remember dad right there with Ella. Mom had taught dad how to play and they would play duets. once you remember the keys it's only a matter of putting them in the right order."

Uma noticed, he said Mom and dad, Not Rapunzel and Eugene.

He pulled away, his face falling into one of pure seriousness "Uma I have to tell you something."

She nodded, he flinched his eyes shifting between sharp gold and soft blue three times before landing on a soft blue and dimming. His eyes focused again "Ryder what is it."

He smiled wryly, "Just that I love you," He kissed her again quickly before standing and clasping his hands behind his back leaving the room muttering to himself.

Uma watched as he left, *'He's trying to fight in pain, I need to help him'*

I'm In quarantine so um gonna try and write as much as I can

As I'm gonna do with every song tell me what you thought of the song

~DarkVixen

Chapter Twenty-four

Disclaimer: Some of the elements used in this chapter are barrowed from a book series called wicked lovely. Character names like, Sorcha, Bananach, Niall, and Chela are from that series, the concept of Faerie, the discord eating fay and Gabriel's Hounds are all barrowed from the series. I own none of it.

~DarkVixen

"When you were given your role, you were told that you would use your magic for good. We gave you a choice and that is what you told us you wanted to do." Queen Clarian said from the holographic image of herself in Pixie Hollow at the pixie dust tree.

"Not only did you disregard this role you stopped the natural balance by stopping other fairies from completing their roles in nature." The blue fairy added, "We are assigned these roles so that there is always a balance of goodness and darkness magic."

"You may as well have just caused the new dark ages with the amount of bottled-up darkness magic floating around." Flora finished.

The Queen Fey, who was the oldest yet as beautiful as the day she came into existence, Stood. Sorcha was her name, she had red hair and silver eyes she was the embodiment of order. Her twin sister Bananach who was the embodiment of discord and war, showing that these two sides were needed for balance stood next to her sister. "The fairy council has made its decision, and we have deemed you a danger to magic and to the world," Sorcha said.

"As punishment we condemn you to be stripped of your magic and serve your life sentence as a human pet to the High court in Faerie which will be possibly hundreds of years in this dimension." Faerie was a world beyond a vail where one month equals a year here, she

would never see her daughter again, "Brystal Lynn Evergreen you are here by stripped of any and all magical abilities." a silver light enveloped her as he coughed and grew weak.

The dark king Niall stood, "these powers will be placed upon your daughter when we deem her ready," he turned to the assembled rulers "Let's get all this courts into hiding whether it be in the shadows, behind trees, or wherever summer and winter fey go until this storm blows over." all the rulers nodded a long and quickly dispersed to find their partners/ lovers and made a run for their domains. Balance was tipped and no goodness or light magic could fix this. It had to put itself in order and not even all of them were goodness fey.

Sorcha took the woman, placed her on a leash and made her way to Faerie where if she was lucky the darkness would never touch. It would require someone on the inside and outside to let Ella in and there were only two people who could make that happen, both were loyal to her.

Chela, the Second-in-Command of Gabriel's Hounds, walked out to Aaron and the rest of the Hooks, "The Council deemed her guilty." Aaron and Harry both dropped their hook in excitement cheering and hugging each other CJ ginned jumping on Aaron's back and Harriet laughed picking up Harry. "Now if you'll excuse me the dark king, in order we assist the other courts in hiding until the magic is back in balance and we are semi-loyal to him. The dark court and hounds on the other hand would love to revel in the misery you create." she grinned and walked off to find her mate.

~~~

It was a week before The Hooks came back from neverland. When Aaron walked into his office the first thing, he was was Lonnie with her feet on the desk reading from a sword catalog. "I see you made yourself comfortable love." Aaron said.

Over the month that Lonnie had been in Tirulia she had come to an understanding with Aaron. He treated her well as long as she didn't actively try to aggravate him. The father he would go under 'not treating her well' was to throw her out of his office and make her go
~~~

play with CJ who was actually very fun and really just enjoyed teaching her how to fight like a pirate. He even let her see her parents every now and again. The only exception being when he wasn't in the castle.

"I was bored, Evie and Doug spent all week reading nerd stuff." Aaron let out a laugh, "How did torturing pan go?" She winced.

"Not as I expected actually. We didn't really torture them." Lonnie perked up, "That was the plan of course but the moment we found him he started treating us like family claiming we were lost boys and girls it was weird." he placed his bag down and his coat on the rack. "Apparently Belle and Adam were draining the magic from Neverland trying to make everywhere conform to their no magic rule. Only stopped once we came into power, but the damage has been done He's like seventeen now, and I think he took a liking to Harriet"

Lonnie cringed back, "Draining the magic!?"

"Yeah, apparently, they did it to a ton of places. They had managed to stop the pixie dust tree for years and lead to a ton of creatures in wonderland dying or living human life spans which they're not supposed to. A few years here could only last a few months there and it was leading to their people dying fast."

Lonnie never had magic so she never stopped to think about what a lack of magic would do to some worlds and some people. She was jerked from her thoughts when Aaron lightly pushed her spiny chair away from the front of his desk so he could write an Email to Ella. "There's more, isn't there?" She placed her feet in the ground and scooted closer to him.

He grumbled and tugged on his red hair before telling her, "The mermaid populations in Neverland were hurt from the lack of magic. Not only that but a lot of them were massacred because they're a violent species. Neverlands Ecosystem is all out of Wack, now and it kinda hurts to think that my kind were slaughtered."

"We never stopped to think about who was hurting."

"Huh?"

"We all sat back and lived out perfect lives and never stopped to wonder who was in pain."

Aaron shook his head and took her hand, "if i got the chance to live he I'm sure I would have been just as blind, It's not your fault and it's not your parent's fault, Its Auradon. "I spoke to the mermaids."

~~~flashback~~~

Aaron sat on a rock leaning over to talk to the mermaids which was mostly a variation of clicks, Hums, and hisses, ***"your mother, Ariel and your sister Melody tried to save us"***

"It didn't really work Auradon had so many more people against her,"

"They were draining the magic fast here so she couldn't stay transformed for long."

"How did they ever get here?" Aaron clicked back.

"That's the thing no one's sure. Not even Peter and he is the island. He said he closed all Entrances except for the star, and they couldn't have flown, not with only on fairy and no dust."

Another mermaid surfaced, one with green hair and blue eyes, ***"I found it."*** She said, swimming over with a black stone, ***"I finally found it."***

All the mermaids crowded around her as she swam to Aaron. "Well, I'll be." Pan said, appearing out of nowhere hovering upside down over Aaron.

Aaron jumped so high he almost fell in the water, "Don't scare me like that or I *will* feed you to tick tock."

Peter just laughed, ***"What's this, girls?"*** He hissed and clicked.

"What's causing the drainage, at least it's the one down here, we think they spread all over the island, their power vacuums but
~~~

whatever goes in only comes out when broken so best wear gloves when picking it up." Aaron did as told and wore full leather gloves to pick up the stone.

He looked to Pan who looked just as mad as him, "Let's find the others."

~~~End flashback~~~

"We found them all and Pan managed to contain them for now, but we haven't broken them yet. "Pan want's to do before he turns 18 though."

"Understandable." Lonnie shrugged.

She leaned back in her chair and heard the voice again, *"Can I please come out? I won't fight back, I just wanna get out of here."* The voice was hoarse and tired but still definitely Aarons.

"I'm gonna go talk to the others." She smiled, swinging herself up. She back tracked a bit "oh and by the way" he looked up with a raised eyebrow, "Can i get a cutlass."

He laughed, "Suddenly wanna be a pirate, Lass."

She shifted her eyes, "maybe"

"Well, see when I get a day off after catching up, I'll take you to a weapons shop and you can pick out all you want." She grinned and clapped before running off down the hall.

She was looking for one person in particular, "Harry!" the boy turned calmly and smoothly. "I have a question," she said skidding to a stop.

"What Is it lass?" He asked Leaning back on the wall.

"Every time we're around Aaron at the same time, I see your face, you're hearing it too." It wasn't a question, "The voice."

His eyes grew wide, "You 'ear that? I t'oug't I finally lost me 'ead."
~~~

"I thought I was going crazy," She laughed in relief, "How to we figure out what that is cause frankly what is says is disturbing."

He placed a hand on his chin in thought, "T'eres only one person 'round w'o could figure t'at out."

"Who?"

He Grinned madly, "Evie o Corse"

Chapter Twenty-five

[image]

"Why are we getting Evie exactly, I'm not trying to be mean but she's not the sharpest tool in the shed." Lonnie said, trying to keep pace with Harry's long strides.

He rolled his eyes, "Evie's smart, 'nd real nice but 'er mom told 'er guys only like dumb girls 'nd well, we're tec'inally villains so nice is out of t'e question."

Harry met Evie shortly after him and Mal broke up, he was laying on the rooftop across from her castle after a bad fight with Hook. His Sisters and Brother hadn't found him yet so he was alone and frankly freezing. She had seen him through her window and asked if he wanted a blanket covering up her nice act by saying she was going to get rid of it anyway. She gave him an apple and spoke to him till Aaron found him. Evie's attention and compassion for Aaron's siblings was something that he admired, it was one of the reasons he didn't punish her the way Ella did Jay, Jazzy did Carlos or Ryder did Mal.

"If anyone knows w'ats goin' on it's 'er" They came to a stop at the library, "You said t'ey've been in 'ere all week." She nodded. They opened the doors and it only took a quick go around in the science section to find Evie and Doug in hammocks with piles of books around them.

Doug was the first to see them, "Heyyyyy" He drew out trying to hide the book he was reading under the blanket he had in his hammock.

Evie looked up, her mind racing; she giggled nervously and twirled her hair around her finger, "What can I do for you guys." She noticed the book still open on her lap and quickly closed it.

"Sneakin' ain't your specialty lass."

"It's not what it looks like-"

Lonnie stopped her, "I honestly have no clue and have no real interest in this. We have a question." Evie straightened up and grew serious again. She nodded for them to continue. "Me and Harry have been hearing a voice that's coming from Aaron when he's not talking and its saying things like, 'let me out' or 'help me please'"

"A voice?" she questioned, "I've known Aaron since we were nine and I've never heard a voice."

"Either it's there or we're both hallucinating the same thing."

Doug perked up, "I think I know or at least have an Idea" He tried to reach over his hammock and fell out. "Owe" he groaned, rubbing his head.

Harry let out a maniacal giggle, he saw the girl looking at him and raised an eyebrow. "W'at I'm still eh villain."

Doug shook his head and looked through the pile until he came to on titled, ***'A History of Dark Spells'*** he flipped through the book Quickly. "Here" He showed them a page titled ***Mind Mangle*** and read straight from it. "it's said that the Mind Mangle is one of the darkest and oldest spells, cast, Perfected and used properly by only one, Adreana, more commonly known in recent years as the dark one. She was a dark sorceress who lived hundreds of years ago, many have tried to replicate the mind mangle, but none have succeeded. The effects of Adreana's spell were to make even the most pure hearted people grow dark and angry. The only tell-tale sign of this spell on the body was a marking that could range from a brand to a change in hair color, (at random there was no control over this). Many claimed to have heard the voices of those trapped within their own head, but this was never confirmed. It's said all were released from her spell upon her banishment to the shadow realm and she perished taking the spell perfected spell with her."

It was silent for a moment, "That's a lot to take in." Lonnie said after a moment.

Evie got down next to Doug, "Is there a way to verify and undo it."

"Doesn't say this is just the history, but if anywhere has it, it would be Corona."

"W'y corona"

He flipped to an old drawing in colorful ink, "Because Adreana was from Corona, in fact she was friends with the first princess." He turned the book around and showed them the drawing or rather painting of coronas' first princess smiling and side hugging a young woman with messy, short, black locks in dark robes hat were way to reviling for the times, with beautiful sapphire eyes and ruby red lips. "When she became queen, Adreana was appointed the royal sorceress until she went dark. It's said her work still resides in Corona castle in secret vaults. The counter spell has to be there."

Doug suddenly dropped the book and started coughing, Lonnie hunched over and started too as well. Harry held up Lonnie and Evie held Doug. "We're not getting anywhere if we don't undo the control first."

"Control?" Harry asked.

"Aaron put me and Doug under some kind of selective body control." Lonnie struggled out.

Doug turned to Evie "You said-"

"I said looking for personal freedom wouldn't hurt you, getting the cure to the spell leaves Aaron vulnerable and open for attack." She corrects. "We need to undo this before we can move on." She insisted but she didn't move even after Doug stopped coughing.

"Evie?"

"Yeah, just um, yeah." She shook her head and picked up another book at random.

The other three looked around at each other, "Evie what's going on?" Doug asked, taking the book away from her and grasping her hands in his.

It took her a moment to find her voice. "If we do manage to get into

the vaults of Corona, I'm going against everyone I ever loved. Not only Aaron, Jazzy Ryder and Ella, But Mal, Jay and Carlos too They're the only friends I ever had."

"You wouldn't be going against them You'd be saving them."

"No i wouldn't" she snapped, "Ella is from Corona what if she put that spell in him on purpose."

"Evie lass, S'e was five."

Evie shook her head and pulled her hair. She took a deep breath before continuing, "What we did was wrong, I can admit that. Taking over the four kingdoms, Tricking the rulers into giving up their thrones. Cheating, Lying and Harming our way to power. And then abducting and taking you guys like a penny on the street." She looked up at Lonnie and Doug sadly. Lonnie got down next to the crying princess placing a hand on her shoulder, Harry feeling weird being the only one standing, sat down too. "Our magic, our legacy, was supposed to be goodness and protectors. Not darkness and conquers. We were supposed to help" tears slipped down her cheeks.

"You do," Lonnie said, shocking her, "I was with Aaron a little while ago and he said places like Neverland and Wonderland, places who need magic to live were dying because Belle and Beast were trying to make everywhere conform to the no magic rule."

Harry chimed in, "You 'elped in overt'rowin' that wort'less excuse fer a fairy 'nd let us brin' 'er to the council. T'ey've been tryin' to track 'er down fer years but s'e 'ad incredibly strong wards 'round her so the council couldn' find 'er. S'e was stoppin' people like Mal from gettin' their roles as Fairies. Even if they said Mal wouldn' get one 'couse of 'er fat'er." he shrugged finding the matter unimportant.

"The point being you *have* helped. A lot more than you think."

She felt a little better, but it still didn't fix her other worries "I know what I need to do, and I'm not giving up much here. All they promised me were material and vain possession as that's what I wanted at the time, and I don't need that anymore I don't care.

What bothers me about this whole thing is giving up them" she opened the locket around her neck which held an old, faded picture of the eight of them in front of dragon hall on Evie's tenth birthday all with maniacal smiles on their faces. It was small and to anyone else worthless, but to Evie it was her most prized possession. "I don't know if I can betray everyone I've ever known and loved. Healing Doug and Lonnie is one thing, lifting the spell is another."

Doug was the one to pep her up this time, "Evie if they are stuck in their own head don't you think you owe it to them as their friend to help."

"Ryder and Uma"

"Uma'll love Ryder nay matter w'at and 'ave you seen t'at boy 'es w'ipped nothin' will get between 'em"

"Jazzy and Carlos."

"Carlos is a tough little guy he doesn't need her validation like he thinks" Lonnie told her. "He helped conquer a kingdom for goodness' sake I'd say that ranks pretty high on usefullness.

Harry jumped back in, "And Gil is too good for 'imself 'e'll love a good Jazzy."

There was still one couple nagging her in the back of her head, it didn't involve Mal. She could tell Mal wanted to be good just as much as she did, in fact they all somewhat wanted it. "Ella and Jay."

They all fell silent for a moment. Ella was crazy, a crazy only Jay was possible of containing and loving. Most wouldn't try to run against the raging winds of a storm, but Jay ran forward inviting the winds to sweep him off his feet. If they broke Ella out of her trance there was a chance Jay wouldn't love her, but in the same token, "If Jay truly loves Ella, a different hair color and a toned-down attitude won't drive him away after all she's still an isle kid." Doug assured with a half-smile.

Evie smiled back, she sniffed and whipped her tears. She took another deep breath this time to calm her nerves and fill her with

determination, "Well then" She picked up the potions book she was reading before, "Let's get to work."

Mini Chapter

[image]

~~~Centuries ago,~~~

The little blonde girl ran as fast as her little legs could carry her through the forest. She didn't know This place. It was new, it wasn't home yet, so she didn't know how to get around. She ducked under branches and jumped over roots. She had to make it back to camp before she was caught, she could hear the other footsteps behind her. They were soft and evenly spread out, but even the skills that she possessed couldn't help her make no sound in the dense forest.

The blonde girl jumped one second too late over a root and came tumbling down a hill, her white dress staging in a branch and ripping from ankle to thigh; she wacked her head on a trunk as she came to a stop. "Got you Vita." Andreana laughed but saw that her friend wasn't okay, "Vita are you alright." she asked running down to her friend.

The eight-year-old coughed and sat up dizzily, "Yeah I'm fine." she groaned, rubbing her forehead. She looked down at her torn dirty dress and bloodied knee, "Mama is gonna kill me though." she grumbled fisting her dress, angry tears coming to her eyes.

Andreana pried her fist open and whipped away her tears, she placed a glowing white hand on her friend's knee, "Vita has scraped her knee let's fix it in a breeze." The little blond girl's knees healed instantly. Andreana furred her eyebrows and held Vita's dress as she thought of a rhyme, "Though Vita has a Pitch let's fix this dress with an under stitch." and just like that the dress was good as new. "Now stand up." Vita did as her friend commanded, "Let's make my friend glitz and glean let's fix her up nice and clean." Vita was ready to head back to camp.

"Vita, Andreana," Andreana's mother called out to them, "Dinner"

"Coming Mam!" Andreana yelled back. "You know the pact."
~~~

"Tell no one where we went"

"What we did"

"And about the spells you can cast." Andreana's mother would freak out if she heard her daughter was casting spells and make her stop. Spells were something she could do and something she could control. It gave her power; it gave her words power. It made her feel special, important and talented. her oly limit was her imagination she could do anything she wanted.

This little girl, this eight year old got a tasted of Power and she was drunk on it. So much so that if lying to her mom and forcing her best friend to lie was the price she had to pay to keep her talent and power then it was a price she was willing to pay.

This was gonna be part of a bigger chapter, but I couldn't really continue it with the main eight, so I just left it at that. longer chapter either tonight or tomorrow, (Seeing as I still have to write it it's probably gonna be tommarow).
~DarkVixen

Chapter Twenty-six

[image]

Carlos was asleep. It was 10 am and Jane was bored. She usually kept to herself in her room until Carlos woke up because Jazzy scared her. Carlos had been really nice to her and had filled her in on everything that was happening without her having to ask. He had been really nice, but she had neglected all that the night before when Jazzy came bounding into the screening room celebrating.

~~~Last Night~~~

Jane and Carlos were having a Harry Potter marathon. Jane had her head on Carlos' lap, him running his hands through her hair. Dude and his two new wolf pups sitting at their sides he named them Luna and Stella. Suddenly the two growled, making Carlos push Jane up and over and jump to attention. Only for them to be growling at Jazzy. The shadow girl glared at them and pretended to snap at them back, Whipping her shadow out at them.

Carlos' eyes grew wide, and a deep animalistic grow erupt from him, he ran over and grabbed Luna before Jazzy's demon shadow could grab her and his eyes snapped to his queen. Glowing red and burning with rage, "What in the name of Hades is wrong with you."

She raised an eyebrow and looked confused. "What did you say," She glared.

Normally he would have coward back but she tried to hurt his wolves so he was not having it, "You hurt my wolves Jazzy and I might just lose it." she walked straight up to her looking up at her as he only came to about chest level.

She needed to keep him under control, or else Ella would have her head. She cut her loses and drew her shadows back. "Keep your leather on." She rolled her eyes. "Anyway, I have news for Jane," The sweet smile that graced her lips worried Carlos.
~~~

Jane sat up with fear in her eyes, "What is it?" he asked warily, "Your mom was brought to trial by the fairy council," Jane deflated immediately, her mom was guilty, and she knew that. "She was found guilty and sentenced to a lose her magic and live out her now mortal life in Faeiry." She grinned sadistically. Jane's eyes watered, "she'll never see you again. Isn't that wonderful."

Without a second though Jane ran out of the screening room and to her room. She slammed the door and sobbed into her pillow. She knew her mom was guilty. She knew she was a bad person, but she was her mother, who loved and cared for her. Jane wasn't even mad at the taunting; she was mad that she would never get to see her mom again. She was mad that her mom would never hear her voice again. She was mad she would never curse her mother out for putting up that barrier and locking kids like Carlos on that aisle, Kids who were innocent and condemning them to a life of evil. She was mad her mother would never feel her fury.

Carlos ran after her and sat outside her room, he didn't want her to think he didn't care. He Sat there till four AM when Stella Nudged him awake and tried to nudge him to his room, eventually calling in back up from her and Luna's mother Jupiter, who was a giant wolf, and dragged him by the back of his coat.

~~~now~~~

Jane had woken up maybe an Hour ago and was much calmer than the night before and felt really bad about leaving Carlos like that last night. Finally, she was done waiting and left her room.

She had gotten a little lost in the halls and ran into Gil. she had seen him around, but she never spoke to him, "Hey" she said awkwardly.

"Oh hi." he smiled giddily. "I heard about what happened last night. Are you okay?"

"Oh yeah, just a little shocked and angry with Jazzy."

He tilted his head, "Why are you mad at Jazzy."
~~~

"She kinda taunted me about it and celebrated, which is the real reason that bothered me so much, she doesn't really like me," She didn't know why she started talking. Gil was just really easy to talk to. "She tried to keep me in a jar and she's always kicking me asid-" She started coughing and fell to knee."

What neither knew was that Jazzy was around the corner and the last thing Gil needed was to hear all this about her. She had added her own little voodoo on the spell and attached it to her rings. Now if she heard Jane speak about her, she could stop her by twisting one of her rings.

Carlos had woken up a few minutes ago and had only had enough time to brush his hair and teeth and change his shorts before he heard the coughing. He peeked out the door and saw Gil holding up Jane who was coughing uncontrollably. "What's going on!?" He snapped, throwing his shirt on as he ran over.

"I don't know if she just started coughing," Gil said worriedly. He saw a purple haze appear around her, "Jazzy." He sighed.

Carlos growled again, his eyes flaring up again, this time so hard it made Jazzy lurch forward and out of her hiding spot. Carlos growled and tried to approach her only for Gil to stop him, somehow, he had a feeling, no, he knew Carlos was unstable in that state. "Jazzy leave her alone."

"Why should I?" she heaved out, unable to stand up right.

Gil looked at her eyes, there were red flecks in them, Carlos' red. "Cause Carlos will be mad until you do, and you'll be stuck like this."

She Groaned knowing he was right and twisted her ring again. Jane stopped coughing, and ran to Carlos' side, He brought her into his side and let his magic stop flaring.

Jazzy glared at Jane and walked away. Gil didn't follow instead choosing to stay with Jane and Carlos, "What was that?" Jane asked.

Carlos shrugged, "From what I know about the control she put on

you it should only activate when trying to think up something bad to do to her. What were you doing before I came out?"

"She just insulted Jazzy." Gil told him, placing a hand on his chin, "Maybe she added some Voodoo to it."

Carlos threw his hand up, "Of course she did, now if you even insult her, she can hurt you."

"Okay now I'm scared."

"I'm sorry Jane, I shouldn't have dragged you into this." he said, holding her closer.

Gil thought back to the conversation he had with Harry yesterday, He had mentioned wanting to free Doug and Lonnie. "I think I have an answer."

~~~

The three of them made the long trek to Tirulia, "Hey Aaron." Gil greeted his ex-crew member seeing him outside letting Lonnie practice with his cutlass.

"Gil?" He asked with a smile. He walked over to his big brother figure. "What's the occasion, I thought you'd be too busy with Jazzy."

"We just wanted to see, well they wanted to see Evie I was looking for Harry."

"Think they're all in the library, Mal, Uma and Ben are there too."

He nodded and the three of them came to the library, "Without the other component I can't reverse it." they heard Evie say.

"So, it's hopeless." Mal whined. She Uma and Ben had made their way her after she got a call from Evie who confinded in her closest friend about what she was doing and hopeing she wouldn't tell anyone.

"What's Hopeless?" Gil asked, finding them in the back.
~~~

They all stiffened except Harry, "Don't worry, 'e's okay I told 'im everyt'ing." he said patting Gil on the back in greating.

Evie relaxed, "I was telling Mal that without the second component I can't reverse the control."

"What component does she have?" Carlos asked,"

Uma copied Ryders soft blue glow and opened it, "It's the blue one I'm not sure what it is."

Jane grinned, "Carlos has the other one, in his locket" she said remembering the day she got controlled. "And it had the same Aura."

"That means it was created by Ryder too, Meaning," Uma touched it and unlocked it. "We can break the control." she grinned, "We have the upper hand on the royal four," a light purple Hue took over her eyes.

This one is not my best, sorry about that, I'm just have a really interesting part I want to get too soon. I have stuff to do for class tomorrow before I start my Asynchronous class on Monday so I'll try to finish at least two more tonight that I can upload. Then for the next six weeks I'll have only one Asynchronous class which means in an absolute best-case scenario I will be able to post every day for the next six weeks with means 42 chapters of content and 42 more fun facts on my page before I go back to an inconsistent update schedule cause in spring, I go back into school but like I said that's a best-case scenario
~DarkHearts

Chapter Twenty-seven

[image] [image]

Last time on DarkHearts: "I was telling Mal that without the second component I can't reverse the control."

"What component does she have?" Carlos asked,"

Uma copied Ryder's soft blue glow and opened it, "It's the blue one I'm not sure what it is."

Jane grinned, "Carlos has the other one, in his locket" she said remembering the day she got controlled. "And it had the same Aura."

"That means it was created by Ryder too, Meaning," Uma touched it and unlocked it. "We can break the control."

~~~Now~~~

Like clockwork Evie got started on a counter for the body Control, but it would take a week or two before it was done Leaving the rest to figure out how to get Ryder free.

Right now, 'the rest' consisted of Jay, Mal, Uma and Ben. Jay had made his way to Auradon and bounded into Mal's room giggling, "I got it I got it."

"How is Hells Halls did you get to the Corona vaults."

"I didn't Ella did, she was taking out a bunch of Andreana's work."

Mal and Uma looked at each other in shock, "That would pretty much confirm that she's using Andreana's magic." Mal spoke.

Uma Picked up the book that Jay brought, which was Andreana's personal spell book and Journal, "Whoa this is some seriously dark magic. The Only spell she ever used that fits the bill here looking for is the ***'Mind Mangle'*** we were right on the mark." she flipped through the centuries old notes. "Here, 'it is in my discoveries that
~~~

the ***'Mind Mangle'*** is one of my most dangerous and powerful spells. There is no set way to undo the spell, the only consistent theme is that it takes three items that have magical essence and an injection, but it requires talking to the victim to acquire which items. It's nearly impossible to get through to whom they used to be, but it seems they can be reached though powerful memories or recreating familial moments whether they were involved or not as long as it had a significant impact on them. Note to self: Do Not Release Lowell, his animals are more powerful under your control IF HE IS RELEASED, THEY WILL OBEY HIS ORDERS AND END YOUR RAINE.'"

Mal nodded taking in the information, "Ryder doesn't have many childhood emotions and even if he did-"

"Ella's holding them hostage." Jay finished, "Okay then A familial moment, and I can think of one more important than anything else."

~~~

"Ella, Love." The blond who was carving a protection Sigel on a candle looked up from her ruins book and to her boyfriend.

A small smile graced her lips and her face lit up with happiness. It was moments like this that reminded Jay why he did all this and that underneath all of the harm and dark magic she still loved him. She hopped up and to him. She hugged him tight, her arms lacing her fingers behind his neck, "We haven't been spending much time together, what have you been doing?" She pushed him down into a chair and sat sideways on his lap. She wasn't spelling him at all, she was just talking to him. She just wanted to spend time with her boyfriend.

He placed one hand on her thigh and the other on the back of her neck as she cuddled into his neck. "I know I'm sorry, nightlight. I was with Mal and Uma. Ryder's birthday is coming up and they wanted to do something for him."

She looked up and smiled at the mention of her baby brother's 16th birthday, "What did they want to do for him?"
~~~

"Uma thought it would be a great idea to release the lanterns since it's your family tradition."

Her smile became fixed, "The lanterns" her voice broke a bit her eyes becoming Hazy. "It's a tradition that hasn't happened in years."

"Ah come on, it'll be fun, and it could be romantic for Uma and Ryder, doesn't that sound amazing the two of them surrounded by beautiful lights and his family crest."

She looked up at him with shining green eyes, "It does," She took a moment to think, "Okay I'll release the lanterns, if you stay with me when it happens because you're right it does sound amazingly romantic." She giggled, leaning in and pressing a firm kiss to his lips.

Jay smiled into the kiss placing a hand on her cheek, bringing her in impossibly closer. "Done" He came up just long enough to say.

~~~

Jay had helped with the preparations giving the girls all the details. "So, I have to get one a boat with Ryder like Rapunzel did with Eugene and hope it's enough?"

"We don't have many other choices and Ben has already been bed ridden from helping us so getting Ryder out of the castle for a few hours is the only way to keep him safe." she said doing Uma's make-up sticking to cool purples and blues as opposed to the warm colors she was going to start with.

"I'm really worried, Mal."

"Everything's goanna be okay." she said, finishing up her eyeliner. She screwed it closed, "It has to."

There was a knock on the door and Uma opened it, "Whoa" Ryder breathed out almost breathlessly. "You looked gorgeous."

"You don't look too bad yourself." She smirked trying to keep her cool.
~~~

"You sure you don't want to come at least to Corona Mal?" He asked before starting anything.

She shook her head and wrinkled her nose, "nah I have to get dinner ready for when you two get back so we can all sit down and spend some friend time together or as i call it, third wheeling because Ben is tired." Ryder laughed as she straightened her black Crystal tiara on her new blue and purple locks. "Now Hug and kiss your girl and get going to Corona."

Ryder did just that pulling her chin up and kissing her, even Mal fangirl a bit. "Oh, and Ryder," he turned back to her, "Happy birthday"

Ryder smiled, "Thanks Mal" He offered an arm to her and the two walked out to the limo. Mal hoped more than anything that this worked, she wanted to get to know Ryder and she wanted to love freely. She wanted Ryder to love freely and without expectation.

The drive wasn't that long, instead of the castle they parked at the lake. "Wha-"

"It's not a romantic night with your sister and Jay around, we'll head there later."

"Where are they?" Ella asked

Jay placed a hand on her shoulder, "They wanted to do something together while the lanterns were released."

She huffed a bit but nodded, "Okay." She stepped out with Jay onto the balcony and looked down at the assembled citizens, each one voluntarily there no one was forced to. "Today is a momentous occasion" She announced, "Today for the first time in nearly thirteen years my little brother Ryder spends his birthday in his homeland of Corona." The crowd cheers. "So, in natural royal tradition I will do him the honor of releasing the lanterns/ Like they did to find our mother, and for my birth and his, my brother will see the 'floating lights' once again, Corona will see the 'floating lights' once again." She opened the case with a yellow and purple lantern on one side was a Sun, the symbol of Corona and on the

other was a shattered Mirror, Ryder's symbol. She released the lantern leading to the release of all the others

Ryder and Uma sat in the boat on the lake laughing as they joked with one another until something caught Ryder's eyes making his scoot to the edge of the boat to watch. Ella's lantern flew up Hundreds more following, All the boats on the lake doing the same, "The lanterns." He laughed like a little kid as he watched them with so much wonder.

Uma watched him with a soft smile, she had never seen him so happy. He was good deep down and she wanted to share that with him. She had never seen so clearly, but she knew what she wanted down. She saw the light. Her eyes widened, The light, maybe just maybe.

Uma

All those days, watching from the windows
All those years, outside looking in
All that time, never even knowing
Just how blind I've been

Ryder turned to her in shock and just listened to her beautiful voice.

Now I'm here, blinking in the starlight
Now I'm here, suddenly I see
Standing here, it's, oh, so clear
I'm where I'm meant to be

And at last, I see the light
And it's like the fog has lifted
And at last, I see the light
And it's like the sky is new
And it's warm and real and bright
And the world has somehow shifted
All at once, everything looks different
Now that I see you

She pulled out two lanterns and waited for a moment hoping he

would continue the song. Tears started streaming down his unmoving expression. She got worried that she had somehow ruined the plane but before her anxiety got the better of her,

Ryder

All those days, chasing down a daydream
All those years, living in a blur
All that time, never truly seeing
Things the way they were

The two of them releases the lanterns Ryder grabbed Umas hands in his own bringing one up to his face breathing deeply letting his tears flow.

Now she's here, shining in the starlight
Now she's here, suddenly I know
If she's here, it's crystal clear
I'm where I'm meant to go

Both

And at last, I see the light
(Uma: And it's like the fog has lifted)
And at last, I see the light
(Ryder: And it's like the sky is new)
And it's warm and real and bright
And the world has somehow shifted

All at once, everything is different
Now that I see you
Now that I see you (his eyes flashed bright blue)

Ryder leaned in and kissed Uma, it was different from all the others, this wasn't the fury of a villain, this was soft and hungry like he would lose her any moment. She pulled away and touched her forehead to his, "Ryder?"

His blue hair had faded and was no longer there, He opened his eye which were still glowing blue, He smiled sadly choking though his sobs as Uma whipped away his tears, "Its me."

So, what do you think, did i do good?
Are you sobbing?
Are you mad at the cliffhanger?
Are you excited for tomorrow's chapter?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Twenty- eight

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *Ryder leaned in and kissed Uma, It was different from all the others, this wasn't the fury of a villain, this was soft and hungry like he would lose her any moment. She pulled away and touched her forehead to his, "Ryder?"*

His blue hair had faded and was no longer there, He opened his eye which were still glowing blue, He smiled sadly choking though his sobs, "Yeah its me."

~~~

Uma stared at the sobbing boy in front of her, he was weak and clearly in pain, it let out a string of coughs gasping for breath as he went. He gripped Uma's arms; she was the only thing keeping him up right. "Listen Uma, I don't have much time. Not enough to tell you everything I want to." He groaned and leapt forward Uma catching him. "In the past this would have been close to impossible but with Gil and Evie being alive and around it's a lot easier."

"Ryder you're not making any sense."

"Just listen to me!" He snapped fear and exhaustion falling off him in waves, "I can't hold on much longer, Evie can astral Project into people's minds that's part of her power, Gil has that ability too, but I don't know if he knows how to do it. Get Gil and Evie to do it to me, When Evie looks in my head there's a vault for my emotions that's all she's ever focused on There's a door to the right telling her to bring Gil through there she won't be able to get in on her own. Thoughts are Gil's power not hers."

"Gil doesn't have any magic."

The groaned again "Yes, he does, so does Harry and so do you. You could have Helped us but there was already a plan and I'm glad there was so you can see this from outside and fix it." They both
~~~

saw the streak of blue in his hair coming back. "You need to do it when I'm asleep. My magic is too powerful otherwise and I'll know. I trust you Uma" He coughed again his hair turned vibrant blue and his eyes dimmed.

The coughs subsided and he shook his head, "Yikes." His voice was calmer, smoother and much more like the one she was used to. "I think I blacked out for a minute. Did I say anything?"

She shook her head, "No you just coughed a bunch. Are you okay?" She pretends to be worried, placing her hand to his head checking for a fever.

"Yeah, I'm fine." he smirked, Not smiling. The Ryder Uma has known since he was thirteen and she was fourteen doesn't smile. "Just a little Dizzy Let's get back to the castle to see Ella and then head home, Mal wanted to do dinner and I don't wanna pass out before I do that."

She nodded and brought the boat in so they could get back to the limo so they could head to the castle. The first person they saw when they got there was a young man who was tall and scrawny with a blue streak in his hair not unlike Ryders. "Varian? Uncle Varian." He said scrunching up his eyes.

Ella popped up from behind him, "Yep" she giggled. "I went through the whole 'they let him stay here' thing it was cleared up. He was looking for us."

"Hey Moondrop." He smiled, Ryder smiled and crushed the older man in a hug before following his sister inside. Uma was left staring at a villain who was welcome to stay. "Rapunzel and Eugene fought for me to stay." he answered her unasked Question. Varain could see the hurt, fear, shock and confusion on her face. He could see it from the moment she stepped out of the limo. He was older than these kids and he had seen a thing or two in his time. He made a face as he realized he was making himself sound older than he was. "Hey, is everything okay."

"Hmm oh yeah Everything is fine."

He looked behind him in the direction of the royals then at Uma and crouched to her level, "Look I'm all for these kids running the four kingdoms, but I can tell you know something." She opened her mouth to retort, "You don't need to tell me I'm just letting you know, If it's big, and can't go on, it's never too late to get on the right side of History." He nodded at her and followed his god kids inside.

Uma though about what Varian had said as she walked the halls trying to find Jay. She hadn't even realized that what she was doing was all in the name of good. She had thought it was just for Ryder but no it was fighting for change and goodness. She shook her head as she realized that this is what's she wanted because she wanted the real Ryder and to do that she would kneel to goodness.

She literally ran into Jay and toppled over, "Got 'cha" Jay muttered as he caught her by the arm and pulled her up. "So, what happened."

She came back to reality, "He came through not for long, but I was able to speak to him." She beamed. Jay's eyes lit up with hope, "he said Evie's powers allow her to astral project and that Gil has powers and can do that too. No, I was not aware, and I don't think he is either. He said when he's asleep we need to get Gil and Evie to go into his head and speak to him properly, that there's a door to the right of his 'emotions vault' that Evie can't get through unless Gil is with her, then he can tell us how to break the spell on him."

"Gil knows how to astral Project Jazzy taught him the basic's years ago," Jay said remembering the incident, "He couldn't do it on the isle, but she explained it to him, maybe a lesson or with two Evie will do,"

"It'll have to be because we're already down to a month a half before Ella's done for." Jay Nodded tensely at that reminder. "Did anything work with her? I mean lanterns are a family thing."

He shook his head, "I thought it would, but she just seemed delighted. There was no real change though,"

"Maybe she didn't have a strong connection to them."

"Maybe, we have to figure it out though." Uma nodded at the two left to join their significant others.

~~~

The night had drawn on. They had fun with Ella and Jay then came home and Ate Dinner with Mal and Uma told her and Ben what had happened. Everything seemed perfect until 3 AM.

An ear-splitting scream ran through the corridor drawing Uma, Mal, and Be Out of their rooms and running to Ryders. He was thrashing around growling and screaming, "Let me Go!" He sobbed, "Let me out!" He scratched at his face Tears pouring down his cheek as his screams echoed through the castle.

He sounded like a kid screaming out for his parents who couldn't hear him "Mama, Dad, Ella!"

~~~

Ella sat at her vanity after Ryder and Uma left. She had just gotten out of the shower and kissed Jay good night. She lurched forwarded shadows and light pouring out of her mouth and eyes.

The two sides were mirror images. All that was different was the girl. One side of the mirror sat a blonde girl with vibrant green eyes rosy and beautiful blond locks in a pink robe. On the other side a Girl with blacked out eyes pitch black locks and a pale face in a black robe. Besides these differences they were the same girl. Ella wasn't even sure who was who anymore. She wants to know if she was looking at Andreana or if it was the other way around. The two had been stuck together for too long.

"You took a risk today." One said, but which one

"I know what I'm doing."

"And Ryder-"

"I have that under control his memory is under lock and key."

"We can't fail."

"I know."

The light and shadows retreated into the girl who had Black and blond locks and a purple robe. Who was sitting on what side of the mirror who said what? Did Ella want this? Was she helping or was she biding her time? Was there a demon in the mirror looking at Ella or was Ella the demon in the mirror? There were no clear answers only Ella could tell you but she's smarter than that and won't speak until she's free.

As always tell me what you think, any song suggestions, and predictions you have. I do read them and take them into account.
~DarkVixen

Chapter Twenty-nine

[image]

The days following were hard, not only on Ryder but everyone involved Ryder kept falling in and out of clarity and a lot of bodily harm. Ryder had come out of his room everyday with new injuries on top of the old ones. Scratch marks across his cheeks, bruises on his wrist and sides it was just really hard to watch.

When he wasn't screaming and crying for help, he was the same as he had always been proud and suave pretending nothing was wrong, trying to hold together a facade that was clearly falling apart. He would mutter to himself, afraid to tell Ella because she already didn't trust him and thought he was going soft. He couldn't let her know that he was failing, he was afraid of what she would do to him.

"I need a pin." Evie groaned, throwing the book down. They were at another meeting but this time just with the royal four. Ryder using his magic to hide his bruises and scratches "I can't administer this properly without one."

"I'll get one from Jazzy's things." Carlos offered.

"No, the pins they used while they might have been disguised as something else were untraceable. Meaning they wouldn't leave body marks or solutions behind. Even the smallest drop of this out in the open and Ella will find out what we're doing.

Uma perked up, "I have one." She pulled the key out of her shirt and uncapped it.

Evie smiled and unclipped the pin from her neck. "You see they thought that by splitting up what was used they'd be better protected. But to do that you need to trust who you work with. And trust and fear are two very different things." she prepped the needle before turning to Doug, Lonnie, and Ben, "Who wants to go first?"

They were all terrified but Doug, trusting Evie more than anyone else, held out his hand for her. She gives him a soft smile and a kiss on the cheek before Injecting him. There's a soft white glow under his skin meaning the two injections canceled each other out. "Alright, the other two."

"Do I get a kiss too if I go now?" Lonnie smirked.

"You've been spending too much time with Harry." Evie fondly rolled her eyes and freed her and Ben. "There, and good timing too, with me and Gil heading in tonight, we're going to need all the help we can get."

A dark atmosphere took over the room and everyone realized the dangers that laid ahead. If Ryder found them, they would be in so much trouble it was game over, but if not, they could save his life. There were so many If's, could's and, maybe's that no one was really confident in themselves the only thing that made them sure of it was that the instructions had come from Ryder. A version of him that was stuck in his own head screaming for over a decade. A version of him that deserved so much better and deserved love and happiness. Ryder was just a kid who had been pulled from his bed as a baby, he deserves a second chance heck he deserved the first chance he was denied.

~~~

That night Gil and Evie had scaled the Castle wall and fell through Uma's window. "That's a lot harder than I remember." Evie huffed.

"Well, you spent the last couple of months with your butt on a throne." Evie looked up at her with a dead expression as Gil Helped her up.

"Come on, we have to get this done." He pulled Evie into the corridor and followed Uma to Ryder's room.

"Can you do it from the hall or do you have to be in the room?" She asked nervously.

Evie winced, "we have to be looking at him." Uma contained her
~~~

freak out but nodded and opened the door. "Once we're in close the door and move our bodies across the hall. Bring them back out in thirty minutes."

"And if you don't come back in thirty minutes?"

She shrugged, "Pray I guess there's not much else we can do." She sat on the floor cross legged

"This does not make me feel good."

"I don't think any of us feel good right now." Gil hummed sitting on the ground next to Evie. He grabbed her hand, both gripped on to each other tightly and exited their bodies walking through the threshold of the door closing it quietly behind them. Uma started her watch for thirty minutes.

Gil and Evie didn't let go of each other, they couldn't, the last thing that was needed was to get lost inside Ryder's mind. They landed where Evie always did, a meadow right outside Ryder's Emotions Vault. Ryder's mind was so calm and peaceful, it was hard to believe the turmoil he was going through, it seemed so perfect "Door to the right." She whispered. Gil suddenly pulled her along having seen it. "How did I miss that?"

He pointed to a sign that read, *though scape*, "You deal with emotions I deal with thoughts. it was probably never visible."

The two braced themselves and opened the door. Evie gasped, dropping Gil's hand, her own hands flying to her mouth. It looked like Rapunzel's tower but in ruins. The walls were cracking, all the paintings falling apart, a mirror shattered, curtains tore down, a wardrobe turned over, a smashed piano and what used to be Rapunzel's seventy feet of golden blond hair was littering the ground brown and faded.

In the corner pulling at chains that bound him to the floor sat Ryder who was struggling against them in a white Tee shirt and blue jeans and no shoes. A white cloth gagging him. He was chained just like his mother.

He let out a muffled scream upon seeing them. Tears falling from his eyes, relief, fear, and exhaustion evident in his eyes.

Evie ran forward and pulled the gag out of his mouth, don't worry we'll unchain you and-"

"No!" he winced as it echoed and stayed silent like he was waiting for someone. "He'll know you were here; I could have shimmied the gag out but if I'm unchained he'll know." He huffed and was able to lean his head against Evie's shoulder. "This is the first unconcerned human contact I've had in years."

Evie laid a hand on the back of his head. And Gil is next to them, "Ryder what do we need to do." He asked pushing Ryder back, so he wasn't straining the chains.

"Oh right, Cassandra, find Cassandra, she still has her moonstone sword. We don't have the sun drop so that'll work fine and my father, Eugene, he has some Sundrop energy in him. I don't care what it is a tear or a lock of his hair, it doesn't matter. Here's the hard part, but easier than it would have been otherwise. I wasn't given a brand, my hair just changed color. My magic, the gold it used to be, is corrupted, in order to heal it has to mingle with the dark magic in my system until it can fully cancel it out. That takes time but to do that you need a piece of my mark which shows the dark magics epicenter in my body."

"You're saying we need to cut a lock of your hair."

He nodded, "The essence in there mixed with the essence from the sword and my father should create a liquid that can be injected in the back of my neck, that will free me and start the healing process for my magic. If i had a brand you would have needed to tie me down and carve into it I guess but I don't, so you just need to cut it." The two nodded understanding what they needed to do. "Now go before I wake up; this was the Easy part." There were footsteps and Ryder tensed, "Go now" He panicked.

"What about-"

"I'll be fine but if he sees you, he'll tell Ella and as long as she's

trapped too, she's dangerous. Just go I'll be fine."

Gil Pulled Evie up "Come on." They run towards the door, Gil sees a shadow down the corridor, "Keep fighting Ryder."

"Don't worry about me, I won't stop fighting. for every minute of the rest of my life I will fight if I have to." Gil didn't notice but if he would have been placed next to Rapunzel, they would have looked like twins. Not because he looked just like her but for the look of determination on his face. Just as a foot stepped into the light of the broken tower the thought scape closed quietly.

Evie and Gil were thrown back to this plan just as Ryder started screaming again. He clawed at his face leaving angry red scratches across his cheek and forehead. Uma ran in, allowing Evie and Gil to get out and into the bodies hiding in Uma's room until she got back. "So?"

"There's, well, it's a lot." Evie said, biting her nail, the broken position of the mighty boy king haunting her mind. Gil nodded the screams of terror ringing in his ears.

Alright there's a way to save Ryder let's hope all goes well for the poor boy.
And the body control is gone meaning Ben Doug and Lonnie can be more useful.
Keep an eye out, because this is only Ryders's recipe, the others may require villain work, isle tools and keep your eyes open cause Audrey will be back soon.
~DarkVixen

Mini Chapter Two

[image]

Chad leaned his head against the cool stone wall, and he was woken up in the middle of the night again by the pained screams that could only be Ryder. The voice was too deep to be Ben. He had no clue how the others down here couldn't hear it. There was a part of him that wanted to stay don't here and cower but there was a stringer part of him, the part that his mother had influenced, that wanted to go and make sure he was okay.

It didn't really matter who Ryder was and who he had become he was screaming bloody murder up there. He had already ruled out Ben and Mal hurting him as Ben was too good and Mal was terrified of him. The only ones it could be is Uma, the only one that was still up there, but he didn't know Uma enough to just assume she was bad.

He was not assuming anything anymore. If he hadn't done that in the first place, he wouldn't be down here.

He laid his head on his mother's shoulder as he tried to remember something, anything at all about being friends with Ryder, A lot of it was fuzzy. He remembered Ella, he remembered her because she reminded him a lot of his mother even so young. She was kind, helpful and graceful just like every princess should be. She was a year or two older than him, so the small girl seemed like the biggest deal in his little world.

But Ryder a lot of it was fuzzy playdates and wooden sword fights. He heard another blood curdling shout echo through the dungeon. Audrey Snapped up from across from him. She crawled towards the bar, horror etched into her face, "Who's screaming?"

Chad looked towards the steps grimly, "Ryder."

She looked confused, "Why would Ryder be screaming?"

"I wish I knew." He Mumbled hugging his knees and burying his face in them. Voices of his youth echoing in his head as he drifted off.

This is Purely set up again I couldn't fit it into a chapter. another should be up later today

~DarkVixen

Chapter Thirty

The only sound that echoed through the library was Ben's pen scratching furiously, and Evie Flipping through yet another book. It was really early in the morning Ryder had refused to come out of his room. Everyone was sitting on the floor of the library in PJ's and Boots. The silence and tension between the thirteen of them was thick. CJ and Harriet were still very confused but their worry for their brother outweighed their confusion.

"Okay so all fer are under a dangerous ancient spell" Harriet started.

"Yep." Evie said only half listening

CJ continues on, "And if we don't break them out of it starting with Ryder, then Aaron, then Jazzy, Then Ella." It could be dangerous because the others would realize. And the girls are more powerful."

"Exactly." Mal hummed.

"And we only 'ave a month and a 'alf,"

"Precisely." Uma finished

"We isn't t'at just swell." Harriet grumbled, rubbing her temples, "I s'ould 'ave stayed in Neverland and trie' to destroy t'ose power vacuum Gems."

Evie looked up with concern, "we're talking about those later."

"We need Cassandra's Sword and essence of the Sundrop from Eugene, a lock of Ryder's blue hair. We can say that the hair thing is the same for all Four of them." Uma suggested, "He said his original magic is corrupted, in order to heal it has to mingle with the dark magic in his system until it can fully cancel it out."

"He also called the mark in his hair the epicenter of his magic and if he was branded, we would have needed blood from the brand

meaning that this process is always the same since all three have hair colorations as opposed to brands." Evie said, straining her eyes, "I'm gonna need glasses at this rate."

Doug took his off and placed them on Evie's face, she smiled at him and continued to read. Carlos rolled his eyes and took the book away from her, "You can read about Andreana later. Right now, we need to focus. I think we should go to Varian if anything we could always ask him for links to Cassandra and Eugene." Evie snatched the book and slapped him over the shoulder with it

"Are you crazy he's a link to the other two but he's also a direct link Ella, He knows she knows." Lonnie flipped out.

"No Carlos is right Varian could help," Uma said, "he told me it was never too late to get on the right side of history. I think he was telling me that so I'd know to come to him if anything."

Gil bit his lip, "This is a big leap, we could either decimate the whole plan or help us drastically."

"Since w'en do ye know big wor's?" Harry raised an eyebrow.

Gil gave him a deadpanned look, "I knew better than to be like this around Ella. She respects me and that's worrisome. She knows something about myself that I don't know, something she doesn't want to come out."

~~~

Uma was the one to talk to Varian and thank the seven seas. He wasn't at the castle today. She knocks on his door, and he can stumble out not only smoke following him, but Cassandra too. "Next time you try to go against nature and try to utilize what's left of the moonstone, leave me out of it." She snapped then saw Uma, "Oh Hello,"

She looked down and muttered a Hello, "Hey Uma, What's up?" Varian smiled.

"Remember when you said it was never too late to get on the right side of history." Varian's face grew serious as he nodded, "I'm ready
~~~

to do just that."

"What happened?"

"Its Ryder, well really all four of them, they're under a dangerous spell and we need some items to break Ryder out of it before we can break the others."

Cassandra leaned over, "What do you need?"

"We need something from Eugene. He said he does care what it is a tear a lock of hair its doesn't matter just something because he was revived from the Sundrop and Essence from your moonstone sword.

Cass nodded and pulled the sword out from behind the door. "We were actually studying it now."

Uma grasped it in her hand and ran a purple glowing hand over the blade allowing it to glow blue. "There's still magic in here."

"I can call Eugene here and tell him I'm running some tests on what's left of the stones."

"One of us needs to be here to temporarily cut off Ella's connection to him so she doesn't know, but I can't see the strings.

~~~

Jay arrived with Eugene in tow, "Hey kid."

"Eugene I'm not fourteen anymore." he whined with a voice crack making both Cassandra and Jay snort.

They got the former king to sit down, and Jay grabbed the black thread that was floating in midair. The poor man started gasping, "What the heck happened." he huffed.

"What's the last thing you remember?" Jay asked.

"Family day."

He winced, "That was three months ago."
~~~

His eyes widened, as he started at the two teenagers Cass and Varian, "We want to set things right but in order that means helping your kids, but to do that were gonna need a little help." Uma told him.

He nodded determinately he had never been able to do anything for them if he could help them now well that would be enough for him no matter what it took. A father is supposed to fight, e supposed to stumble and fall so his children could rise even if it meant using him as a steppingstone. but he wasn't a steppingstone now he was a door mat, and he knew he needed to fix that. If he was going to do anything right as a father and teach them anything it would be this, kindness.

~~~

"Got them!" Uma Exclaimed coming towards Mal with the sword and a lock of Eugenes Hair.

"Good now it's time for the hard part. Ryder himself." she grimaced, this was going to hurt

Sorry todays Chapters are so short the payoff will be up tomorrow anyone got a song idea?
~DarkVixen
~~~

Chapter Thirty-one

[image] [image]

Uma ran her glowing purple hand hovering over the sword and another over the vile that held Eugene's hair. Both glowing blue and gold respectively as she circled her hand around both items and bright them together melding their energy into a liquid substance that she placed in a syringe. "Okay let's go over this one more time," Jan said with a clipboard in hand.

"Jane we've done this six times" Mal groaned

"And i will keep doing it so you don't die in there so listen." she snapped. "What's White."

"I got it get ready." Mal answered boardy for the seventh time.

She nodded, "Pink?"

"He's chasing me i need back up."

"Bule?"

"He woke up Help"

"And Red,"

"I'm In serious Danger help me now"

She breathed out a sigh, "I feel a little better."

"I don't," Ben said, raising his hand.

"Ditto" Carlos agreed.

Jay groaned, "Why isn't me, Carlos or Ben doing this. Or even Uma"

Mal groaned, "Cause, he sees Ben he won't hesitate to Kill him just for being in your room, He sees you guys he'll know immediately,

and Uma has to stay here cause she's the only one who knows how to do this essence thingy. And I'm gonna need someone to strap him down so we can fix him. With me it will give him a moment before he realizes what's going on."

"It's almost time." Doug says checking his watch.

Mal nodes and leaves the room.

~~~

"Why is it always hair with these Rapunzel kids?" Mal Snarks as she places a com in, "Can you guys hear me."

"Yeah, we can." She heard Gil reply.

"Alright, wish me luck." She heard all of them reply with 'luck' and it fall silent again.

She creeps into Ryder's room quietly, it's times like this where she loved that she was an isle kid. She hovered over the broken boy, He had three claw like scratches on his cheek a black eye, a cut on his forehead and a band-aid across the bridge of his nose. She grabbed the scissors off of her belt and gently held up a lock of his blue hair.

Ryder shifted in his sleep unexpectedly leading to Mal accidently gently tugging his hair. His eyes snapped open, and Mal froze, dropping the lock that was in her hand. "What are you doing Mal."

Her eyes widened; he hadn't even looked at her. She squeaked, fear filling her. He rolled over and sat up looking at her. She was kneeled on the side of his bed, there was a scissor in her hand and a vile on her belt.

It only took him seven seconds to get what was happening. His eyes widened, but they hadn't prepared for what he really did. He rolled out of the bed and ran from the room. "Um guys, He just left."

"Did anyone account for him trying to warn the other three." Gil asked. There was no reply, just the sound of everyone shuffling, which could only be them running after Ryder. "He ran down the west Hallway."
~~~

"I got him." Lonnie said. She ran down the corridor and slid under his kicking out his legs. Instead of landing on his back like she anticipated he turned it into a roll and immediately sprang but up, "You Just woke up." she snapped under her breath. "He headed towards the trophy room."

"On it." They heard Gil. He grabbed him from behind only for Ryder to throw his body forward and throw Gil over his head and onto his back. "Towards the library I'm just gonna lay here for a minute." he groaned all the air knocked out of him.

Jay was the one there and grabbed his bare wrist effectively draining most of Ryder's Energy, getting him to fall to the floor. "I got him meet me here."

He dragged Ryder in who was kicking and screaming. "You're gonna regret this, you have no Idea what you're doing."

"Yea' we do," Harry said Helping Jay strap him to a chair, "We're savin' ya."

"No, you're not, you're killing me."

Doung nodded, "Yeah, maybe this part of you. But it's gonna be better for everyone in the end."

The boy screamed and pleaded for his life. He saw Uma fishing mixing the magical properties from the other object, "Uma, love please." He sobbed, "Don't let them do this." He lowered his voice "It'll never be the same again. I might never love you again." he hiccupped.

Fresh tears fell down Uma's Cheeks. She walked up to Ryder and placed what could be their last kiss to his lips. She grabbed the scissors from Mal and Clipped the lock of his hair "I know." She Took it over to the desk and he screamed bloody murder and waved a purple glowing hand over it mixing the blue and gold essence into the syringe. "I'm sorry, my shadow." she winced as she basically stabbed the syringe into the back of his neck.

The screaming stopped and his head fell forward, his clenched fist

fell limp and he moved no more. "What's happening?" Ben asked concern lacing his voice.

"That's supposed to Happen." Evie assured, she took Doug's glasses off his face, making him look around confused for a moment. She pushed them up her nose and flipped through her book. "He's gonna be out for a few hours." She bit her lip.

"Evie what are you hiding." Carlos asked.

"He might not wake up for a week." she started

"A Week!? Ella's gonna notice Him gone for a week." Lonnie shouted

"And when he does, he might not remember anything that happened since his birthday since that's when we woke him up."

There was a pause. "We're dead, we're so dead." Carlos groaned.

"Let's all just think positive."

"That's literally impossible. I live with Ella." Jay freaked.

~~~

Jay Had managed to convince Ella that Ryder was sick, but it took a lot of Help from Mal and Uma. she said fine but that she was coming back in four days, they all pretty much resigned themselves to their fates.

Uma didn't leave his side the whole time. Mal had to drag her out for dinner where she would constantly fear that she killed him.

Which leads up to now, Ella was coming tomorrow, and they were no closer to Ryder waking up. Uma sat cross legged on the bed next to him holding his hand in her lap. He was pale and still, His once blue hair faded back to brown, and his injuries slowly healed. She gently brought her elbow up to her knee still holding his hand kissing his knuckle. "You're gonna be okay." She says running a thumb over them. Because you're always okay. And I can't wait for you to show me the real you, because I know your brilliant."
~~~

♫Loving and fighting♫
♫Accusing, denying♫
♫I can't imagine a world with you gone♫
♫The joy and the chaos, the demons we're made of♫
♫I'd be so lost if you left me alone...♫
♫You locked yourself in the bathroom;♫
♫Lying on the floor when I break through♫
♫I pull you in to feel your heartbeat♫ (she placed two fingers to his wrist feeling his faint heartbeat.)
♫Can you hear me screaming♫ "Please don't leave me!" (Tears started streaming down her face)

♫Hold on, I still want you♫
♫Come back, I still need you♫
♫Let me take your hand, I'll make it right♫
♫I swear to love you all my life ♫(Her voice broke)
♫Hold on, I still need you♫

♫A long endless highway, you're silent beside me♫
♫Driving a nightmare I can't escape from♫
♫Helplessly praying, the light isn't fading ♫(she brushed his hair from his face)
♫Hiding the shock and the chill in my bones♫
♫They took you away on a table♫
♫I pace back and forth as you lay still♫ (she leaned her head on his fist)
♫They pull you in to feel your heartbeat...♫
♫Can you hear me screaming, "Please don't leave me!"♫

♫Hold on, I still want you♫
♫Come back, I still need you♫ (Please)
♫Let me take your hand, I'll make it right♫
♫I swear to love you all my life♫
♫Hold on, I still need you♫

♫I don't wanna let go♫
♫I know I'm not that strong♫
♫I just wanna hear you♫
♫Saying, "Baby, let's go home." ♫
♫"Let's go home"♫
♫Yeah, I just wanna take you home♫

♫Hold on, I still want you♫
♫Come back, I still need you♫

"I still need you" She sobbed out

Ryder looked up smiling at Uma's voice until he heard the muffled groans of his counterpart who was gagged and chained just like he was. "Oh, shut up." He sighed Taking the chains and chaining him to the floor. "I can't get rid of you cause you're part of me now. But I can leave you here like you did to me." He looked at the accusing face his counterpart gave. "Don't look at me like that. I'm still a Vk." he smirked.

Uma sobbed, holding his hand to her forehead. "Please" she whispered to herself.

She felt another hand grab hers, she looked up and saw Ryder weakly smiling at her from his place on the bed "Baby let's go home."

Thank You @leitoravoraz16 for the song suggestion I know you said Not to use it unless I wanted to shatter your heart, but I thought I made it clear I'm and Author thrive off of your emotions.
Ryders back, yay. How will this effect everything down the line?
Unrelated but I love the picture I made but I'm still made I couldn't find a good one that didn't have two white people, like I couldn't find a good interracial one its 2022 like why?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Thirty-two

Last time one DarkHearts: *Uma sobbed, holding his hand to her forehead. "Please" she whispered to herself.*

She felt another hand grab hers, she looked up and saw Ryder weakly smiling at her from his place on the bed "Baby let's go home."

~~~Now~~~

Uma stared at him for a moment, almost debating if her lack of sleep had finally caught up with her. "Ryder?" She reached out and brushed a piece of his hair out of his face.

He smiled bigger this time, brighter, and truer than he's ever smiled before. "Yea it's me. It's finally, really me." He chuckled a bit sitting up against the headboard.

A smile slowly graced Umas face and she finally excitedly let out, "Ryder!" She jumped on him. The boy was still very weak, but he caught her and held her close with one arm the other keeping the two of them up right. "You're really here, you're really okay."

"Okay is a relative term, I just spent a decade chained and gagged in the thought scape that looked oddly like my mother's tower. I am not okay, but I'm alive, breathing, and in control and that's good enough for me."

Uma cuddled into his neck holding onto him in a death grip almost like she was afraid he would disappear if she didn't hold him.

"I'm here and I'm not going anywhere." he Assured her even if he wasn't too sure himself. He was still terrified that he wasn't fully there he was terrified that he would lose his grips and end up back in the tower.

Mal had come running the moment she heard Uma scream for
~~~

Ryder, but the halls were way too long. Ben was running up beside her and the two burst into the room.

Ryder looked up from his place under Uma and used the hand holding her to wave a bit. "Hey guys."

Mal's hands flew to her mouth, she couldn't help but step closer. Uma looks up with tears in her eyes but she's smiling. She crawls off Ryder's lap so Mal can tackle him in a hug. Ben walks up hesitantly. "Hey, been a while." He smiles at Ben holding Mal who opted for sitting on the bed with her arms around his neck. "King huh? Big job believe me I know, but" he sighed, "I know you'll do great."

Ben Smiled and shook his head, he took a seat on the chair next to his bed, "Not as good as you were. You were cursed and did more in three months then my dad did in twenty years. And now with a clear mind I know you can do great."

He tilts his head as Mal pulls away, also slightly confused. "What are you saying Ben."

He grinned, "I'm saying You guys were right, as long as I'm on the throne my dad has power, I don't want that. He reaches out and holds Ryder's hand, you should be the one to stay on the throne when this is all over. You've got great ideas and an innovative mind that can be out to so much use now that you are in a proper head space."

Ryder looked Touched and scared all at the same time, "Ben-"

"You won't have to do it alone of course I'll be here and one once we get everything back in order the other three can help."

"Thank you, I promise to do the best I can." Ryder smiles and swings his legs off the bed, "and i can't be a proper king or help you get my sisters and Brother back in order if I'm laid up in bed." he stood up despite the protest from Uma and Mal. "Girls I can't help from my bed." He looked down, "and apparently in silk Pajamas, what was I thinking?" He shook his head and stretched out his arms.

"Ryder you shouldn't be walking around right now Ella's coming

tomorrow-"

"And I think I'm sick, I know." all three stop and stare at him, "I could hear everything while I was asleep, Yes Uma I heard the whole song." She blushed at his suave smirk. "I can lay down tomorrow, but I'll go crazy in bed today."

Uma pointed to her head "What about your hair,"

His hand glows blue and he grabs the strand of Hair, and his hand runs down it, it turns the same shade of blue it was before. "What?" He asked as they stared at him with wide eyes, "was it on the other side?"

"Your magic is still blue." Mal points out.

He sat next to Uma who scooted closer to him. "My magic is still healing and it's gonna take a long time. It's like how people change it takes years. Yeah, you're all different then how you were four months ago but even these small changes took months. Three days isn't long enough to fix twelve years of corruption on my magic." They all absorb the information nodding along slowly. He claps startling Uma, "I have some prisoners to apologize to." He takes a deep breath, "alone" He runs his hands through his hair again as he pulls some clothes out of his closet.

~~~

Chad hears the sound of boots thudding against the stone steps, Part of him wants to cower in the corner with his parents but he finds himself moving closer to the bars wanting to know what had been going on.

He meets Audrey's eyes who has a better view of the steps, and she mouths, 'Ryder'

The young man steps into the light of the dungeons, rather than being in a pair of black ripped Jeans and a leather jacket he looks like he's fully embraced the role of a king. He's in a pair of black slacks. A blue shirt and a black blazer with a shattered mirror on it. He still wore a pair of black combat boots, but they looked new as
~~~

opposed to the worn-out ones they had seen three months ago. On his arm was a black leather bracelet that had two chains hanging from it and a silver watch on the other wrist. His black studs prominent in his ears. "Hey" he gives a lopsided grin, "Bet you didn't expect to see me today, or ever." he nervously laughed, "I have a lot of explaining to do."

Just as Queen Leah was about to open her mouth Aurora covered her mouth, "Mother why do you continue to disturb those with the key."

"It's fine Aurora, she's right to hate me." Sleeping beauty looks at Ryder, a little surprise. "Let me start from the beginning."

"So let me get this straight, you were cursed when you were on the aisle. It made you act bad and corrupted your magic," Audrey recaps, sitting cross legged on the floor of her cell.

"That's about right."

"And now you're trying to help the rest of the Vk's and Some of the Ak's to fix Jazzy, Aaron and Ella."

He nods, "that's Absurd." Queen Leah snaps, "You don't actually believe this do you."

"Now I know where you got it." Audrey tightens her lips closes her eyes and nods.

"It seems to me like an easy excuse for your actions when you realized you weren't fit to rule."

He shook his head, "Listen I get it's sounds crazy but i just spent a decade in a busted tower with my wrists chained behind my back and I kinda have to go up against my sister soon and I'd rather not have your pessimistic voice dangling in the back of my head. As for the ruling Part I was born to rule as much as anyone in this room, being second born doesn't make me any less royal. So please shut your mouth. I'd rather you not Influence Audrey and Chad 'cause I need them."

"You need us?" Chad asked hope shining in his blue eyes

"Yes, as much as I would rather not involve you cause Ella hates you, you're part of our memories," he admits. "Memories are our story and sometimes you have to reread part of the book to remind yourself where you were."

Both of them looked thoughtful. "Do we have a choice?" Audrey asked.

"Now really." Ryder Chuckled darkly.

"And you believe him."

"I was still raised on the isle, I'm still a Vk. What do you want from me?" He stood up from his seat in the middle of the dungeons, "I'll give you a few days to think about it, Ella still messed up and she'll be here tomorrow. If you ever want out of these cages, you'll keep quiet about what I'm doing cause then you'll end up with Ella. Right now, she's a hundred times worse than me.

As Ryder walked out of the dungeons Chad let out a breath, at least he was Okay. It seemed even Twelve years later Ella was still gonna be a big deal in his eyes.

Ryder looked at the glow blue coming from his hands and rubbed his face, "We've still got a long way to go in the way of regaining trust." He closed his fist effectively snuffing the glow, "It's fine just take it day by day. One step at a time. Nothing happens overnight."

No pictures today wasn't sure what I would put
~DarkVixen

Chapter Thirty-three

[image] [image]

Mal's Recap: *"okay so it's been a crazy few days, we finally got Ryder out of his mind mangle and he's a lot more chill then i expected, but now Ella's coming to see him and it's time for us all to put on one heck of an act. And honestly, I'm terrified Ella is Ryders big sister and he's not sued to lying to her. If we mess up its game over."*

~~~

Ryder was still in his Pajamas as he had to jump back into bed the moment Ella came over. He was going over the plan as he saw the car pull up and his sister step out with Jay in tow. He hid behind the wall as she looked into the office window and met Mal's eye. She closed the curtains and walked out to meet her, "Mal there's one more thing."

"It's gonna have to wait." She told him seriously. "Get to your room and pretend to be sick."

"But Mal, your crown, -"

"I'll straighten it, just go." She shoved him into his room and kept walking.

He slowly walks to his bed and whispers to himself, "please don't tick her off please don't tick her off."

Mal Met Ella and Jay at the door smiling brightly, her crown on display gleaming with a danger only Ella could see that the moment. "Hey Ella."

"Hey Mal," She smiles, giving the fairy a hug, "What's with the blue." She asked, picking up a strand of the usually purple hair.

Mal ran her hand through her short strands "Oh, um, I got mad a
~~~

few days ago and my hair lit on fire again but this time the fire was blue, and it changed my hair color."

"You should call Hades." Jay looked at his girlfriend confused, "Her father." She shrugged walking into the castle

Jay whisper shouted at Mal as they walked in, "Hades is your father!?" she nodded tensely. "You could take down Ella if you wanted to."

She shushed him quietly making sure the dark queen didn't hear them, "No I couldn't, I've spoken to him once, I don't know how to control the powers I apparently have from him, and frankly I don't like him very much," she said crossing her arms.

Jay jumped back a bit, "Your hair is smoking"

She looked up and groaned, "really." she patted the smoke trying to make it go out. "See."

They got to Ryder's room where he was stuffily talking with Ben and Uma. "Hey Ry Ry." Ella said walking in and sitting on the side of his bed next to him. "How ya feeling." She placed a hand on his head trying to feel if he had a fever.

"Much better than yesterday," He assured her.

"That's good, who was here with you?"

"Uma" he told her, "Mal was-"

"Mal wasn't here with you?"

Mal tensed, Jay made a move to grab her hand.

Ryder caught himself before he could flinch, "No she was-"

"It doesn't matter what she was doing, she should have been here. How many times do I have to make it clear?" She pinched the bridge of her nose and glared at Uma then back at Mal, "Mal is your Queen and Uma is your toy." Uma flinched.

"I was catching up on the work that was falling behind because Ryder couldn't get out of bed." Mal said quickly. She didn't understand why Ella was so dead set on her being at Ryder's side if he was sick. "I came in and checked up on him I just wasn't-"

Ella stood, "My baby brother should be your utmost priority. The work could have waited, and I don't mind Uma here as long as you tend to your duties." She stepped up to mal, "I think you need to be reminded who you swore loyalty to and who holds your leash."

Mals eyes widened, and her hair caught on fire, "I'm not a dog, and I'm not one of Carlos's wolves, No one holds my leash cause I don't have one." her fangs were bared, and her hands gripped her dress tightly, "I'm not a show pony, and unlike you I'm not human." Mal looked her up and down with an unimpressed look. She didn't see Ryder motioning for her to cut it out in the background she was too angry and all she saw was Ella and the blue flames that surrounded her own fist.

"Ryder where is it," There was no answer causing the blond to harshly look back at her brother, "Well" he pointed to the drawer next to his bed.

He looked at Mal and mouthed 'I'm sorry.' she tilted her head confused only for it to feel like a million volts of electricity shot through her veins starting at her forehead and shooting down her body. She fell to the ground screaming her hands flying you to the source, the stone on her crown.

Ben tried to rush to Mal's side, But Ryder gestured to his finger. He got the message and pretended to fall down in pain. Uma did the same pretending to crawl towards Mal but falling back screaming. The only one really in pain was Mal.

Ryder wanted to tell her to cut it out, that it was enough and Ella Mal understood, but he was too scared of her. "Ella enough." Jay's Voice cut through Mal's screams.

She gave him a glare, "What did you say to me?"

"I said stop." He said standing as he was previously crouched down

next to Mal. His voice was that of a king, the one his father always wanted of him. "She gets it now stop," Jay had gone through his own ordeal, never with the crown and never this painful but he knew well enough that enough time under that shock, if it was powered by Ella, and let's be real it probably was, would numb Mal for a few days. She wouldn't feel anything and would jump at the slightest of sounds. "Let my sister go."

She rolled her eyes but pressed the button on the remote that controlled the crown and the shocks stopped, Mal was gasping for air, "Is it over?" She asked hesitantly feeling around for her surroundings trying to see if she was in the same place. She tried to kneel, but her arms wouldn't hold her up. Ben pretended that the control wore off and crawled towards Mal, Holding her up. Uma did the same scrambling off the bed.

"Get her out of here and all of you leave. I have to have a talk with my brother." Ben and Uma stood bringing Mal with them, "You too Jay." He glared at his girlfriend and left the room. As soon as the door was close Ella Smacked Ryder upside the head, "You never used that on her,"

"There was no need to." he flinched.

"Mal is the most Chaotic and the most untrustworthy, every given opportunity you need to remind her who we are and put her in her place!" she shouts her magic pulsing around her in a deadly aura. She makes a move towards the window and twisted the ring on her finger, it wasn't her's, it was Andreana's not that anyone but her knew that. "Remember baby brother." She turns back to him, "Everything I'm doing, everything I'm working towards is for you, and we need Mal on our side. Her as an enemy is too much of a setback."

He shook his head, "If you just told me-"

"It's a surprise for your 18th birthday," she said in an eerily calm voice. 18 the number rang in Ryder's head. She was planning something for the day he wouldn't be able to come out of his mind mangle. He would have been the last one and they would be secure. "No setbacks and Mal not listening is a setback I can't afford that

right now." she spoke softly again and sat next to him bushing his hair out of his eyes and kissing his forehead.

He nodded, "I understand." This woman terrified him, he never realized how scary she was when he was chained up, she looked like a perfect beautiful porcelain doll, but the way she smiled when Mal was getting hurt was scary the way she sharply yelled at him scared him, and the sharp aura pulsing around her, forget about it.

"I'm gonna go torment some prisoners before I leave." He nodded and stayed in his bed. This wasn't right, none of it was and he knew that, but he was a coward, a scared little boy who wanted to go home.

♫Breathe it in♫
♫Let the fear consume you♫
♫Then force it out♫
♫Remember that it's not true♫

He stood up and looked out the window playing with his own rings, a habit both siblings had.

♫The higher you climb♫
♫The farther you fall♫
♫But don't be ashamed♫
♫Of wanting it all♫

He had climbed too far on his quest; He couldn't blame only his sister or Jazzy or Aaron or even his dark self. That darkness was part of him, and he wanted revenge deep down too, he had to accept that before he could heal.

♫Cause the view from the top♫
♫Is beautiful but fleeting♫
♫The world seems to stop♫
♫But looks can be deceiving♫ (he pulled his blazer out of his closet and threw it on the chair getting the rest of the clothes out)
♫You're surrounded♫
♫But you'll always be alone♫
♫So pick a place, pretend it's home♫

This wasn't home Auradon wasn't Corona but its where he was and where he would stay, he would make it home.

♫Take control♫
♫Be strong in your conviction♫
♫Embrace the pain♫
♫A dangerous addiction♫

He admits the pain over the last few years drove him forward and he had become addicted to the feeling, The drive.

♫Once you make a choice♫
♫There's no turning back♫
♫Trust only yourself♫
♫When you're under attack♫

He couldn't even trust himself; his mind was a dark tunnel was afraid of, he needed to trust the others. But he couldn't put his burden on them

♫Cause the view from the top♫
♫Is beautiful but fleeting♫ (He had learned that the hard way)
♫The world seems to stop♫
♫But looks can be deceiving♫
♫You're surrounded♫
♫But you'll always be alone♫
♫So pick a place, pretend it's home♫

♫I'm a secret, I'm a lie♫
♫I'm the weakness I despise♫
♫I am selfish, I am brave♫
♫I'll prove to you that I am not afraid♫

He couldn't be afraid not anymore

♫That I am not afraid♫

Ella was his sister, not the monster that lived in his closet when he was three. She came in and kissed him on the forehead once more saying her goodbyes.

♫Cause the view from the top♫

♫Is beautiful but fleeting♫
♫The world seems to stop♫
♫But looks can be deceiving♫
♫You're surrounded♫
♫But you'll always be alone♫
♫So pick a place, pretend it's home♫

♫So pick a place, pretend it's home♫

He watched Jay and Ella leave. This was home Uma, Mal and Ben were home. And he had to make the best of this situation. He put on his suit and went out for a bit

~~~

Later that night there was a knock on her door, Mal limped over to it with Help from Uma and opened it, Outside was a basket of sweets and a teddy bear labeled Uma in Ryder's perfect cursive. And another with strawberries and everything strawberry flavored and a stuffed dragon Labed Mal. But what caught their eyes was Dragon eye. Maleficent's scepter stands proud and tall with a note taped to it in Ryder's handwriting.

'I'm sorry I'm too scared of Ella, I'm sorry I didn't stop her, I'm working on it. This should help us all for the road ahead, if anyone can handle the power and temptation it's you. I'm sorry you have to deal with the more scared less fantastical Fitzherbert kid.'
~Ryder.

Both girls looked at each other than Mal's eyes widened. Against the wall next to Uma was a Trident radiating with magical energy. Another note taped to it.

'A gift from Triton he believes in you and so do I. I love you Uma and I'm sorry you saw how weak I am with my sister. I'm not strong like you but I'll get better. I swear, I love you so much.'
~Ryder

Both girls held their new source of power completely and utterly shocked
~~~

~~~

"Ella, you went too far today!" Jay screamed at her at the top of his lungs, ripping off his crown. The moment they walked through the door Jay pushed her into his room.

"I did what I had to do." She answered her voice level and calm, bigger stronger men then she would have been shaking in their boots. She wasn't afraid she didn't even flinch at his tone of voice. She turned away and towards the door

"You didn't do what you had to, you lost your way, you said this was all of the eight of us well you just hurt one of us!" Jay was Beyond mad. He had to get whatever was going on in Ella's head out.

Her eyes widened and she turned to him "You think This is fun for me! I've spent my whole life trying to keep what I had left from falling apart and maybe I lost myself on the way. I was Five years old singing to myself in the middle of the street in the pouring rain with nothing but the clothes on my back and a baby brother to take care of. My tiara, my kingdom, my family, my life, all of it was snatched away from me. I knew from the moment I met the seven of you that you would get so many opportunities and so much greatness handed to you. I could feel it and I would always be the banished princess, so you tell me is it reasonable for me to lose my mind considering everything I've been through" Jay stayed quiet she was making no sense, what opportunities did she block from them, was it worth it, were they better off this way, so many questions and not enough answers. "That's what I thought," She snapped him back to reality "now sit down," she pushed him to a sitting position on his bed, so she appeared taller "and listen to your queen, love." she quirked an eyebrow.

This was a long one

As always How did you like the song, did it fit?

Do you like the picture?

What do you think of our new Ryder? (Honestly to me he is a
~~~

precious child we must protect)

How do you feel about Ella now?

And what are you most excited to see next?

~DarkVixen

Chapter Thirty-four

[image] [image]

Ryder had stayed in his room the rest of the day and Ben dragged him out the next day to meet with the others. He found it hard to look Mal in the eye and just started the meeting with them like he would one with the rest of the Royal four.

"Next, we have to free Aaron, the girls are the last priority, Ella has to be the very last, their way to strong and we have to grow in numbers and strength to take down Ella. I'll be surprised if we even managed to retrain her with all of us."

"We can't out gun 'er," Harriet says, "we need te out smart 'er."

"We can talk about my sister later right now we need to worry about Aaron. He would be in a similar state considering he was the second youngest, they though less would work on me cause i was so young, Aaron should have been the same." CJ hesitantly raised her hand, Good Ryder unnerved her. "You don't have to get permission to speak CJ"

She blushed and nodded before asking, "W'o's T'ey"

Ryder placed a hand to his chin, "I'm not sure who cursed us. If anyone was awake it would have been Ella, all i know is i woke up with a white streak in my hair."

"White." Jane asked.

"Oh, yea I read about that." Jay perked up, He had been pretty angry since his and Ella's fight, "The streaks darken over time depending on how much hate lives in you."

Ryder's head snapped to her so fast they thought he would get whiplash, "Ella's have always been Black," he pointed out.

Uma was the one to bring hope to the situation, "She was the oldest

when you guys were placed on the Isle. So maybe she was the only one with full understanding and anger at the situation." Everyone let out a sigh, "So how are we gonna free Aaron and will these be helpful in this scenario?" She asked picking up her trident and gestured to Mal's staff.

"Those will not be helpful yet, I know you're dying to use them, but Andreana's magic is older than the staff and the trident is only a copy of the original. I'm pretty sure her magic resides inside Dragon eye or at least part of it," He looked to Evie who finally got her own glasses, she nodded with a tense look. Mal side eyed the scepter like it would spring to life and mumbled something about Hades. "Those are for when we have to take down Ella and Jazzy."

"'Ow are we gonna fix me brot'er" Harry asked crashing his knuckles.

"His childhood memories are intact, so I have an idea."

~~~

Ryder Had sent a note to Aaron whom he had asked to meet him on the beach where they used to play as children. Aaron was very confused by the strange request but did as asked.

He knew just as well as the rest that you shouldn't aggravate Ryder, he was half of the chaos duo that was Ella and Ryder. Even if he was younger, he was still just as deadly. Ryder was an agent of chaos, we enjoyed pain and was just as sadistic as Ella. Aaron May have had the bloodlust, but Ryder was Ruthless enough to spill it and that's what really scared Aaron. At the end of the day, he couldn't even torture Pan, but Ryder would gladly rip into Adam given the chance.

Ryder sat on a rock, the same rock the Melody was usually found at. "Ryder" He looked back at Aaron and beckoned him over, urging him to sit down. "What's going on?"

"Remember when we used to play here?" he asked cryptically.

"Vaguely why?"
~~~

Gold and blue holograms about the size of his palms, dance sound and rock singing. "We had fun," He had a hazy look in his eyes, "It was the only time we had any real fun. The only time we weren't in danger every time we smiled."

Aaron looked at the boy in pure confusion, "Ryder what are you talking about? What brought this on?"

"Just remembering that at the end of the day we are family."

"O'course we are, we're all we had, we're brothers and Ella and Jazzy are our sisters," he insisted.

"Do you remember being brothers?"

"I just said-"

"No, I mean really being brothers, when we weren't connected by magic, when we used to do that." he pointed down at the little people he made dancing around the rocks. "We did that a lot. We were Kings and Queens before we put the crown on our heads. We were the kings and queens of our own little worlds. When we didn't have a care in the world."

The two sat in silence for a moment, Aaron just watching Ryder as the wind messed up his hair almost like he was looking for something, something gone, something missing. Ryder started humming a tune that made a hazy look take over Aarons eyes. Out of the corner of his eyes Ryder could see the red in his hair fade a little.

Ryder

♫When we were young♫
♫We were the ones♫
♫The kings and queens♫
♫Oh yeah, we ruled the world♫
♫We were makin' bets♫
♫Man, no regrets♫
♫Wish I could relive♫
♫Every single word♫

Aaron looked at him with wide eyes. They were the eyes of someone who was scared and wanted to leave but couldn't like someone who witnessed a car wreck you wanted to look away but you couldn't. Essentially that's what Aaron was watching Ryder throw away everything they had worked for.

♫We've taken different paths and traveled different roads♫
♫I know we'll always end up on the same one when we're old♫
♫And when you're in the trenches and you're under fire I will cover you♫

The small image of Ryder was singing in tune with him bringing Aaron back to this beach twelve years ago as he knocked Ryder into the water laughing as the little boy waved his floats around so he could stay up right.

♫If I was dying on my knees♫
♫You would be the one to rescue me♫
♫And if you were drowned at sea♫
♫I'd give you my lungs so you could breathe♫

Aaron grabbed Ryder's hand hard squeezing so hard the circulation had to be cut off. He wasn't sure if it was a warning or a life line but he kept going hoping he could get through to him.

♫I've got you brother♫
♫I've got you brother♫

He grabbed the blue streak in his hair and took the chance his brother was still in there he had to be. He looked at Aaron and pulled the streak making it fade back to brown

♫I've got you brother♫
♫I've got you brother♫

Aaron grabbed his hand tight in both hands, he squeezed his eyes and shook his head like he was fighting it. His hair faded back to black, and his eyes violently ripped open glowing red and sea green. His magic wasn't fully corrupted yet (Probably because he used his magic less than the others) so he was easy to get to even easier than Ryder.

Aaron

♫Oh brother, we go deeper than the ink♫
♫Beneath the skin of our tattoos♫
♫Though we don't share the same blood♫
♫You're my brother and I love you, that's the truth♫

Both of them looked at the four tattoos on their arms

♫We're living different lives, heaven only knows♫
♫If we'll make it back with all our fingers and our toes♫
♫5 years, 20 years come back, we'll always be the same♫

Evident by the small versions of them and the older versions of them dancing next to them

♫If I was dying on my knees♫
♫You would be the one to rescue me♫
♫And if you were drowned at sea♫
♫I'd give you my lungs so you could breathe♫

♫I've got you brother♫
♫I've got you brother♫

Both

♫And if we hit on troubled water♫
♫I'll be the one to keep you warm and safe♫
♫And we'll be carrying each other♫
♫Until we say goodbye on our dying day♫

♫Because I've got you brother♫
♫I've got you brother♫
♫I've got you brother♫
♫I've got you brother♫

♫If I was dying on my knees♫
♫You would be the one to rescue me♫
♫And if you were drowned at sea♫
♫I'd give you my lungs so you could breathe♫

♫Oh oh oh, oh oh, oh oh♫

♫Oh oh oh oh oh, oh oh, oh oh♫

♫Oh oh oh, oh oh, oh oh♫
♫Oh oh oh oh oh, oh oh, oh oh♫

♫I've got you brother♫
♫I've got you brother♫

Aaron was gripping on to Ryder tightly, his eyes flickering dangerously in and out, like he was still fighting, "Ryder, Ryder." he clawed at the younger boy's jacket. The rest of the hook siblings who were waiting off the beach looking on in horror and worry "Harry, Harriet, CJ." He yelled violently coughing right after, "Help me" he cried red tears staining his cheeks almost like he was bleeding from his eyes, "Help!"

And thus, starts y Beating of Aaron
As Always, how do you like the song?
Did it fit?
Do you like the picture?
Are you worried for Aaron?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Thirty- five

Last time on DarkHearts: *Aaron was gripping on to Ryder tightly, his eyes flickering dangerously in and out, like he was still fighting, "Ryder, Ryder." he clawed at the younger boy's jacket. The rest of the Hook siblings who were waiting off the beach looked on in horror and worry "Harry, Harriet, CJ." He yelled violently coughing right after, "Help me" he cried red tears staining his cheeks almost like he was bleeding from his eyes, "Help!"*

~~~now~~~

The scream that ripped from his throat was enough to send the rest of the Hooks into a Tizzy. They all right straight to their brother who was gripping Ryder as if he was a lifeline, His anchor to reality.

"We're rig't 'ere lil brot'er" Harriet says holing Aaron up He's clearly on pain his whole-body twitches and jerks. His head snaps to his sister whose heart breaks upon seeing the look in his eyes. Her strong confident little brother, The boy king. The boy meant to lead, the fearless pirate was looking at her with so much fear, sobs escaped him, blood red tears pooled down his cheeks. Excess magic build up, All the magic he hadn't used over the years, releasing from him the only way it could.

Her big sister instincts took over and she pulled a white ruffled handkerchief out of her pocket and wiped down his cheeks doing her best to remove the tear tracks. CJ held her big brother's other hand as he gripped her tight, careful not to be as tight as he was to Ryder, she wasn't fragile, but she didn't wanna hurt her even if he was. Harry stuck close to his brother who had his head leaned on him gasping heavily. None of the Three pirates ever felt so useless.

"I'm holding on but it's still fighting." He gasped in pain. The only thing keeping him up were Ryder and his siblings.
~~~

"I'm here Aar, I'm here what do you need," Ryder said just as Quickly holding him up.

He cried out in pain, "Can't hold on. My head," He whined, "My thoughts."

"They thought scape."

He nodded, "Guarded, can't talk." He screamed in pain as the tide came in all five of them ankle deep in the water.

Attina, Alana, Adella, Aquata, Arista, Andrina, Gabriella and Urchin were all hanging out rather close to the surface hoping to get a glimpse of Aaron seeing as Ryder had mentioned trying to save him. Arista heard a scream and swam towards it, her white hair flying out behind her.

Attina, the oldest of them all, races after her, "Arista what are you doing!" All the others follow suit.

"Didn't you hear that?" There was another scream.

"It sounds like Aaron when he was little, I don't care if he does try to hurt me, he's our nephew and if he's in trouble,"

"Then we have to help," Alana Insisted.

They both raced up, 'We're all gonna get turned into fish food' Gabriella signed to Urchin rushing upward with all the others.

"Tell me about it," he grumbles.

They all reach the surface a peak up seeing Aaron scream and Ryder and the Hooks holding on to him tightly. "Ryder." Adella calls him over.

He shakes his head and mouths, 'In a minute'. The worried look on his face is enough to let them know that he's trying to help and heal him. He motions for them to peak back down and gets back to Listening to Aaron. "Your thoughtscape is guarded.

He nodded, "More than Evie and Gil, L-" He groans again, "Lon-" He

lets out a sharp yell, "Lonnie!" they were all stunned into silence, "she knows all my moves. She can take them, no magic besides my own works in the thought scape, a protection the closer you get to eighteen," He huffs. His hair started fading back to red making Ryder tug at his own hair making the streak return. "Help me please." With one last sob he was yanked away pulled back into the thought scape.

Ryder dropped Aaron's hand the moment he started coming to Harriet was still whipping his face, "Harriet, CJ, Harry What's going on when did you guys get here? Why are you whipping my face?"

CJ was the one to answer, "We we're comin' te see yeh. And yeh 'ad blacked out and fell off t'e rock t'e two o' yeh were sittin' on and 'it your 'ead."

Harry continued, "We 'elped Pick yeh up and 'arrie was whippin' t'e sand off yer face.

"Yea but ya still 'ave a couple o' red spots on yer cheeks yeh 'it pretty 'ard."

He nodded, shaking his head. "Thanks, I guess, what were we talkin' about."

"Just the beach." Ryder said, looking out at the water.

~~~

When He managed to Excuse himself, he made a beeline for the Beach where Ariel's sisters, Gabriella, and Urchin were hiding. "What happened?" Aquata, the fourth sister, immediately asked, "Why was our Nephew Screaming like that."

"I was trying to get him out of his own mind. It worked for a bit, but the feeling is very painful. I needed to talk to him so he could tell me how to get to his thoughtscape. So, we could figure out what we need to free him."

Adella, the third sister, gave him a hopeful look, "Do you think that he'll need something from home." She asked, gesturing down to Atlantica.
~~~

"It's possible but I think it's more likely that he'll need something from his family with Ariel Eric and Melody, I needed things from my family too." he said rubbing her chin. "He got along fine with the Mermaids in Neverland, maybe because they were killers too, but I'm sure he'll be glad to meet you once this is all over." He assured Aaron Aunts.

"Thats not very comforting," Andrina Remarks sinking back down a little. "Were not bad mermaids we're the good ones, the ones in neverland are.... unsettling." she said gnashing her teeth.

Gabriella signed, 'I really hope this all works out, Ariel was so nice to me it's not right that her son is so, so.'

"Scary, Blood lusting psychopath?" Urchin offered.

'I wasn't gonna go that far' She rolled her eyes.

"No that's the right amount of far at the moment" Ryder said worrying Aaron's aunt "Everything will work out." he said standing, he pulled at his blazer and cleared his throat, "it's gotta work out." he pulled down the sleeves of his blazer waved goodbye to the merfamily and walked off

Sorry this one was shorter than usual.
If you were confused about who Gabriella and Urchin are, they're from the little mermaid TV show,
Gabriella is a POC nonverbal mermaid
and Urchin is a an orphaned merboy taken in by the royal family for a bit
No picture today I didn't know what to add
~DarkVixen

Chapter Thirty-six

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *I'm sure he'll be glad to meet you once this is all over." He assured Aaron Aunts. "Everything will work out." he said standing, he pulled at his blazer and cleared his throat, "it's gotta work out."*

~~~Now~~~

So, I have to go into his head, "he lives with me." Lonnie said over the phone to Ryder at 2 am.

"I know but it's the best we can do." He assured her.

"Great," She huffed. There was a loud scream, "I gotta go." she didn't give him a chance before she ran out of her room, Evie, Doug, and The Hooks Following. "Whats going on."

Evie covered her ears but said, "We gave him hope now he's fighting."

Lonnie ran in and saw Aaron Clawing at his face, red streaks giving the impression of blood running down his cheeks, "Please tell me that's not-"

"It's excesses magic," Doug Assured.

She walked up and kneeled next to his bed, "Hey Aaron it me," She grabbed one of his arms, "It's me Lonnie."

He turned a pained expression to her as he continued to claw at his eyes and hair, his eyes flickering between sea green and red. His hair flickers between black and red. "Lonnie, help me please!" he sobbed out, "Please." she ran a hand through his hair, it being the best she could offer. She had no magic she couldn't help.

Evie walks in and places a hand on his forehead, humming a bit making him fall asleep again. "Siren powers, their limited but it's
~~~

enough to do that."

Harriet smiled sadly at the scene, "Ya two go wit' t'e Ot'ers, I'll clean 'im up."

Evie maneuvers Lonnie out of the room as Harriet goes to clean his face again, "Look at w'at ya've done lil brot'er. Catc'in' 'earts just like I knew ya would."

She cleans his hands and changes his shirt before moving to leave the room.

~~~

It's not until the next night that Gil could get out of Agrabah for A projection. "Why couldn't you leave?" Doug asked.

He ran a hand though his long hair, "I got into a screaming match with Jazzy."

"Why." Evie asked, devastated.

"More voodoo tricks on Carlos and Jane. Carlos is about to lose his cool."

"Soon t'is will all be over " CJ said hopefully.

Harry laughed like a mad man to himself, "I just realized we all accidented areselves into t'e good guys"

Gil snorted, "Yeah we did."

Evie pulled Lonnie Between Her and Gil, they both held her hands as Doug opened Aaron's door, "Thirty minutes bring them out." Doug nodded at Evie as she closed her eyes and bother her, and Gil exited their bodies pulling Lonnie out of hers.

The girl dizzily got her baring's, "that sucks"

"You get used to it." Evie told her.

"I hope I never have to."
~~~

"I've never been in Aarons, Mind, I'm worried." She huffed. Evie and Gil Touch Aarons Head and they were pulled in and landed on a beach. "This is nicer than i thought."

Gil snorted, "What did you expected."

"Death, and mermaids. Oh, and the Jolly roger."

There was a giggled at all three hid. It was a younger Aaron and Melody Playing, "his mind must open to the dream scape." younger Versions of Harriet, Harry and CJ ran up. "He wants them all to be with him."

His aunts Urchin and Gabriella surfaced, and they saw Eric and Ariel speaking to them Knee deep in the water. Eric saw the children and ran over picking up CJ and Aaron making them Giggle Harriet and Harry ran around his Legs and Melody Jumped up Climbing on his back.

"He just wants a whole family. Everything that was taken from him." Lonnie said lowly. Aaron wanted everything that was stolen from him. That's all, he was never trying to be evil, he wanted his life back.

"We have to keep moving," Gil said, tugging the girls away from the scene.

They ran up the castle steps where the guards waited. Lonnie let go of their hands and pulled the sword out of the sheath from her back and ran forward, "Whoa" was all Evie got as Lonnie made quick work of them.

"He never even taught us that move." Gil gawked as she rolled between the guard's leg and sprang up, slicing through the two of them making them Poof away in a cloud of red.

Lonnie huffed out a few breaths, "We goin' or what."

"I have to ask Aaron about her."

"What about her?"

"Why He taught her and not me."

Evie laughed as she opened the door and waterfalls worth of water started rushing out, Evie only had just enough time to put a barrier over them. "Aaron!" Lonnie shouted running in.

Aaron was coughing up water and he was chained to the ground, much like his mother had been years ago when she was caught by the sharkanians. What was previously a tail spreading out into legs leaving him soaking wet, Arms bound in only a pair of Jeans. "Oh, I can feel like legs again," He Hoarse voice rang out as he ran his hand over his legs trying to make sure they were real.

Lonnie slid on her knees and warped her arms around his neck. "Are you okay?" She asked checking over his features. "Besides the obvious."

He chuckled darkly, "As good as I could be." Evie and Girl walked in quickly. They had to stop Lonnie from unchaining him "I haven't been able to really talk for years. It feels worse than I remember." he coughed up a little more water. His vision blurred red, "Oh no it's happening again." he brought his hands up to his eyes trying to rub the magic away. "We don't have much time. I mean that in a general term. If this turns Sea green, I'm gonna be in trouble."

"What happens if it does?" Gil asked.

"My real magic will start disappearing," he sighed and leaned against Lonnie who was still holding him.

"What are we gonna need?"

"That's gonna be hard." He hissed almost as if in pain, "I have three different families, so I need three things." Evie, Gil and Lonnie shared a warily look, "I need my sister Melody's locket." They nodded, "She's under Ella's control." They tensed. "The easiest is my grandmother Athena's Music box."

Evie nodded, "they still have that one."

"And the hardest, my ring, the one CJ, Harry and Harriet gave me, Ella stole it."

"Wait, so we have to break into Ella's palace and find your ring." Gil said, his voice quivering, his eyes glowing brown.

He nodded sadly, "I'm sorry it's just what I need."

"It always comes back to Ella." Lonnie whined.

Aaron Chuckled reaching up and moving her hair from her face and touching her cheek. The look on his face was pure emotion. Evie swore she would make this real. "Do the same thing with my hair that you did with Ryders, But the extraction process must be more precise like with my grandfather's trident."

"We can handle that." Lonnie Smirked.

"You're so pretty when you do that," he said awkwardly.

She blushed, "Come one lover girl." Evie said, pulling Lonnie away. A red Hue came over the hall.

"Go Now! I'm waking up."

Evie pulled Lonnie and Gil out, Lonnie looked back at him one more time and he gave her a strained red smudge face smile. As soon as the door closed the hall filled with water again and his legs turned into a tail.

They ran across the beach, Small Aaron Saw Lonnie and it integrated into the dream. Aaron's dream girl, His fantasy.

They were thrown back to the plan of the living just as Doug opened the door again. Aaron was already screaming, the Hook siblings all around his bed already. They stepped back in their bodies and Lonnie dashed out to Aaron. "I've gotta get those two together." Evie grinned.

"Oh totally," Gil nodded. The two of them Grinned evilly.

~~~

When Gil got home the first thing, he saw was Jane huddled in a corner covering her ears, the first thing he saw was Carlos
~~~

screaming at Jazzy. "No, I don't care, you're supposed to come to me first!" Carlos screamed.

"I wouldn't have put her out if you could control those things."

"You hit Jane Jupiter loved her of course she was gonna pounce."

"Maybe you should have taught your wolves about Ella's warning. Love is our most vulnerable and dangerous weakness."

"She's a wolf you had no right to snatch her soul."

She rolled her eyes, "She's a wolf she has no purpose

He growled; his eyes burned red. His magic pulsing around him "I can't stand you Ariana!"

Her eyes pulsed to life, a purple hue surrounding her, "And I can't stand you Lowell."

"Go to Hell,"

"I have to deal with Andreana day after day, It's already hell."

Carlos grabbed Jazzy by the jacket and pushed her against the wall, his voice no longer his own, it was deeper and more dangerous. "Don't talk about her like that."

"Ariana? Lowell? Andreana?" Gil whispered to himself. "Who was Ariana, who exactly was Lowell, and why did Andreana's name keep popping up."

What do you think is happening with Carlos and Jazzy?
what does Andreana have to do with it?
what does Lowell have to do with it?
Who is Ariana?
So many questions all of which i will not answer yet
Evil cackle
~DarkVixen

Chapter Thirty-Seven

[image]

"So, I'll go and get the music box from Triton." Uma said going over the plan, "which is gonna take a possible sleepover with Ariel's sisters." She sighed; she liked the idea just not the circumstances it was under.

Harry was next, "Jay and I got ta get, t'e Locket from Melody." he said playing with his hook.

"And I have to rush home afterwards to get the ring from Ella's desk." Jay said, "Which is gonna be the worst because she never leaves that thing unguarded." He flipped through the copies he made again and groaned, "I don't think I've ever read as much as i have in the last few weeks. My brain hurts."

"Come one you're not stupid." Jane said, picking up his head.

"Not stupid just tired." he said refusing to move his head from the table. "Why is Carlos brooding, Its unsettling.

Carlos was indeed Brooding; he was sitting crisscrossed in a window seat, his eyes burning red, and a glare etched on his face. He was twirling his rings around his fingers. His hair was a mess and he had bags under his eyes. There was no light in his eyes; they were cold and void and uncaring. Two wolves sulking by his sides. "Jazzy killed Jupiter." Jane said sadly.

"Jupiter?" Evie asked.

"A wolf mother that he adopted. Luna and stella's mother." She said, jabbing her thumb at the two wolves.

Mal's eyes widened, "I never pegged Jazzy as a wolf murderer."

"I don't think it was her." Gil said darkly. "She was screaming at Carlos, and she called him Lowell and he called her Ariana."

Everyone Looks at him and is in deep thought, "I think I saw something about Ariana a Lowell," Jay said. He pulled out Andreana's Journal and pulled out an old drawing. He showed them, it was of two girls, 'Ari and Ana, at Ana's Sorceress ceremony.' "They were twins." He told them.

"So, Ariana was Andreana's sister but who was Lowell?" Lonnie asked.

"Andreana's boyfriend." Doug answered opening to a page in his book. It showed another picture, this time of a black-haired girl smiling with a young man with brown hair and eyes and glasses laughing with her. "He had a power similar to Carlos he could talk to and control Animals."

"What do they have to do with any of us?" Ben asked,

"No idea." Evie cringed.

~~~

Ryder brough Uma down to the beach by Aaron's castle, his aunts had been spending a lot of time near the surface lately to watch after him. Ryder picks up a rock and throws it into the ocean. A second later it's thrown back out and hits the boy king in the head sending him tumbling to the ground. "Ryder." Uma drops to her knees beside him."

"There are easier, less painful ways to get our attention." Aquata snaps as Arista comes up rubbing the bruise forming on her forehead.

Alana comes up to Uma looking at her interest. "Is this Ursula's daughter?" Uma nodded tensely. "Well, aren't you adorable?" she gushes. "We're gonna have some much fun with you." she giggles.

"Girls" They all turned to Ryder, "I'd love to let Uma stay with you, but we need something."

"You're getting a bit demanding boy-o" Andrina said.

"This time it's so we can help Aaron." They all lean forward listening
~~~

intently. "We need Queen Athena's music box." They all hissed.

Adella winces, "Dad never lets that out of his sight." she worries.

"Maybe if we tell him, it for Aaron, he'll give it to us." Uma hopes.

"We can hope." Arista said, "Come on" she urged Uma into the water.

Uma gives Ryder a kiss on the cheek and takes off her boots. "Please work." She jumps into the water and a moment later pops back up with tentacles just like her mother.

"Yay she can swim." Alana claps.

"I'll be back tomorrow." she nodded and dips below the water headed to Atlantica.

~~~

Jay walks through the halls with Harry, "Were has Melody been."

"S'e's been scarce." He said, Melody hasn't left her room for days and if she did it was only to grab food. Same with Eric and Ariel, it seems Ellas got them under a well-placed Spell.

Harry knocked on her door and she came out with a fixed smile while she talked to Harry Jay squinted and saw floating string. He grabbed it and she came out of her trance coughing and fell to the floor, Legs week, "What happened? Where am I?"

"Long story but it's been months since family day." her eyes widened, "You've been in a trance and sadly I'll have to place you back in but, Aaron is also in a trance we need something to break him out so we can get you out."

"Say no more, I'll give you anything to save my baby brother." she said clutching her necklace, The locket they needed. Harry winced and looked down at her locket. She got the message and frowned. This was a gift from their grandfather, it was her closet connecting to the sea as she had been locked in her room for months.
~~~

But her baby brother was more important, the locket was a beautiful reminder but seeing her brother whole and happy again and acknowledging her as his sister was all she needed. She took the locket off and handed it to Harry and nodded at Jay. He gave her an apologetic look and released her back into the influence of the spell, and she slipped back into her room wordlessly.

~~~

The boy rushed home thinking of any spell he could use to break the guard charm on her desk. "Nightlight?" He asked Knocking on the door.

"Come in." she calls. And there she is hunched over her desk looking exhausted. "There's my thief in polished leather." she bounces over and pulls his jacket a little so he could lean down and give her a kiss.

"You look like you need a rest."

She shook her head, "I'm fine."

"No" He grabs her wrist and leads her out of her office, "Let's watch a movie."

"Jay, I have a lot of work to get done."

"Then it can wait." he places his hands on her hips and smiles at her shining green eyes. "You're a thousand times more important than work."

She yawns and smiles, "Okay Movie then work."

They walk into the screening room, Ella Puts on her favorite movie, Harry potter and sits on Jay's lap. About two hours in, Ella slips into a deep sleep. She had been nodding off the whole time, but it finally happened around the ending scene.

Jay picks her up and takes her to her room. He loves her, he really does, and he wants to love her for who she really is not some twisted version of her fit to his bad guy agenda. He made himself the good guy so he could save her. He didn't want to be her Thief in
~~~

polished leather, he wanted to be her knight in shining Armour. Ella didn't need someone to fight for her, but he wanted to fight beside her and not worry that the next shot would be at him.

He placed her down in her bed and kissed her forehead, he made his way back to her office and saw a black hue over the desk, "This may be hard but leave it unguard?" He said it as more of a question, "no that's not gonna work." He pinched the bridge of his nose, "You're a sorcerer." he said to himself. "Just make up a spell, one that will work." He huffed and tried again, "I've seen the spells and regarded it now back away and un guard it." The hue disperses and he looks through the drawers frantically.

He finds a ring with a compass on top and anchors on the sides. It just radiated with magic. The inside was engraved, 'Happy birthday Aaron Hook.' it was roughed and looked scratched, rather than engraved.

~~~

Uma was taken to king Triton right off the bat. The sisters knew that Aaron was more important than a sleepover. "Daddy" Attina called out swimming over to her father.

"What's wrong my dear?"

"Nothing's wrong." She assures, "This is Ursula's daughter Uma." She gestured to the small girl with tentacles instead of fins who looked quite uncomfortable. Sebastian gave a small scream and hid in his shell.

Triton's gaze on her made Uma uncomfortable, "Well I do hope you are less trouble than your mother," he said with a smile. "Welcome to Atlantica. Would you like a tour of the palace."

She didn't know what to say, "As lovely as that sounds-" Andrina cut her off.

"She's staying tonight but she needs something it's really important and she needs it to save Aaron."

His face lit up, "Save my grandson."
~~~

"He's under a mind mangle its-" again she was cut off, but this time by the king.

"Oh, I know all of the mind mangle. My father Poseidon Told me all about his encounter with it on his travels. He had encountered the creator of the spell Andreana in what is now Corona."

She nodded, "Aaron is under this spell, and we can undo it, but he-" A scream cut though the water.

"Oh, that sounds like Aaron." Arista sighs.

"It is" Uma said tapping her bracelet a hologram of Aaron comes up he's screaming and pulling at his face, he now has a black eye, a busted lip, a bruised cheek his hands look all bloodied from the magic and red magic was dripping from his mouth. "He's fighting the spell, but he needs some help." She closed the hologram and looked at Triton's horror-stricken face, "He needs magical items for all the sides of his family, we already have someone getting Melody's locket, but I need Athena's music box it will reestablish his connection with the sea and this side of his family."

Triton took the music box off the shelf and sighed, "Please save my grandson, and tell him to keep it," He smiled sadly.

Uma smiled at the king, "Thank you your majesty, we're one step Closer to saving Aaron and the rest of our friends."

This was a bit all over the place but i hope it made sense.
Up top is who imagine as Lowell and Ariana,
I'm honestly loving the mermaids right now

Aaron will have a lot less beating time the Ryder cause with him they had to learn everything.

Next up on the wheel of Trauma is Jazzy so be prepared.

~DarkVixen

Mini Chapter three

[image] [image]

~~~One Year Ago~~~

Ella was sitting at her vanity lighting a half burn candle. She was having a vision; she had held it off all day and even through her date with Jay. Her visons weren't definite they were what if situations.

She crossed her legs and controlled her breathing Her eyes violently snapped open glowing gold. When she came though she huffed in as much air as she could. She stood pacing her room back and forth before coming to a stop in front of her vanity again She pressed her hands flat against the cool brown wood that was probably one white. "Is that necessary."

She lurched forwarded shadows and light pouring out of her mouth and eyes. The two sides were mirror images just like they always were but as she got older the differences became more scarce and less visible. All that was different was the girl and the candle. On one side of the mirror sat a blonde girl with vibrant green eyes rosy cheeks and beautiful blond locks in a purple leather jacket, black ripped jeans, black leather boots and leather fingerless purple gloves. On the other side a girl with blacked out eyes pitch black locks and a pale face in a black leather jacket, black ripped jeans, black leather boots and leather fingerless black gloves. The candle Infront of the girl in purple was white the other was gold. Besides these differences they were the same girl. Ella wasn't sure who was who anymore. She didn't know if she was looking at Andreana or if it was the other way around. The two had been stuck together for Years.

She nodded, "It is for what i have planned."

"But Jay-"

"It's all for Him and Ryder," The other girl assures.
~~~

"What you are doing is so you can keep them safe, even if you must stray for a little while he will always take you back, he loves you. She bowed her head "More than Lowell ever loved me." She whispered to herself as the light and shadows retreated into the girl who had Black and blond locks, a purple jacket and black gloves.

She ran a hand though her hair

♫I saw you and♫
♫Recognized right from the start♫
♫We're both ruined♫
♫With matching insatiable hearts♫
♫And I knew that♫
♫One day we'd take this too far♫

she realized that the two of them were the most fear of the eight, little kids shook in their boots at the sight of them

♫My misgivings♫
♫Fade into nothing when I♫
♫Touch your skin and♫
♫Feel your heart beat next to mine♫
♫I'm not living♫
♫If I don't have you at my side♫

She would lose her mind if Jay wasn't with her.

♫I can tell that we're♫
♫Going to destroy one another♫
♫Our twin flames could ignite♫
♫The whole world for each other♫
♫But something this powerful♫
♫And dangerous♫
♫Will burn until there's nothing left♫
♫I can tell that we're♫
♫Going to destroy one another♫
♫In the end♫

♫Separated♫
♫At opposite ends of the earth♫

♫Is it fated♫
♫The way my path leads back to yours?♫
♫Though I hate♫
♫I've never desired something more♫
♫Yes, I hate it♫
♫But you leave me desperate for more♫

She had to remember that everything she was doing was partly for Jay.

♫I can tell that we're♫
♫Going to destroy one another♫
♫Our twin flames could ignite♫
♫The whole world for each other♫
♫But something this powerful♫
♫And dangerous♫
♫Will burn until there's nothing left♫
♫I can tell that we're♫
♫Going to destroy one another♫
♫In the end♫
♫In the end♫

They would break each other she was going to hurt him to achieve her ends

I don't want to
Stay away from you
So I won't even try
You say you will
Stay away from me
We both know that's a lie

Andreana said Jay would never leave he would always come back and Andeana hadn't lied yet.

I can tell that we're
Going to destroy one another
Our twin flames could ignite
The whole world for each other
But something this powerful

And dangerous
Will burn until there's nothing left
I can tell that we're
Going to destroy one another
In the end
In the end

Tears filled her eyes; she slammed her fist inro the door and kicked it before desperately sliding down wall. Quiet sobs escaped her lips. She didn't doubt the friendly demon yet, she doubted herself, she doubted she was good enough for Jay, he had love her so purely and she was a mess who couldn't even say 'I love you.' The last time those words were said to her, she was ripped out of her bed hours later and taken away them not even bothering to fight for her.

She feared she wasn't worth fighting for. She was going to hurt him, and he was going to hurt her. They were going to destroy one another In the end.

This was originally going to be something else, but I like this song so much and didn't want to wait for an Ella chapter for this
Plus, it kind of messed with the flow I was going for.

Also set up

As always did you like the picture?

What do you think of the song?

Did it fit?

Its 4 Am I'm going to sleep

~DarkVixen

Cast update

[image]

Cast update while I write the next chapter

Dove Cameron as Mal

[image]

Booboo Stewert as Jay

[image]

Sofia Carson as Evie

[image]

Cameron Boyce as Carlos

[image]

Aidan Gallagher as Ryder

[image]

Brec Bassinger as Ella

[image]

Bradley Steven Perry as Aaron

[image]

Zendaya Colmen as Jazzy

[image]

Thomas Doherty as Harry Hook

[image]

Sabrina Carpenter as Calista Jane 'CJ' Hook

[image]

Ruby Rose as Harriet Hook

[image]

Dylan Playfair as Gil

[image]

Rest of the Descendants Cast as themselves

New Cast Members

Payton List as Ariana

[image]

Andrew Garfield as Lowell

[image]

.

.

.

.

.

keep going

.

.

.

.

.

.

Kat Dennings as Andreana

[image]

Chapter later tonight

~DarkVixen

Chapter Thirty-Eight

[image] [image]

Last time one DarkHearts: *Triton took the music box off the shelf and sighed, "Please save my grandson, and tell him to keep it," He smiled sadly.*

Uma smiled at the king, "Thank you your majesty, we're one step Closer to saving Aaron and the rest of our friends."

~~~

Same as last time Uma was Working her magic on the contents had, she had a glowing hand over the locket, Music box and the ring sat off to the side. "There is a lot of magic in these," she had a sheen of sweat on her forehead. She huffed painfully. Lonnie's eyes lit up as she saw the sea green and gold magic seep from the music box and locket.

Uma collapsed, "I can't do it alone. They're way too strong." Gil and Harry walk over to her, helping her to their feet. Gil and Harry's hands glow as they pick up Uma, they glance at each other then back to their captain who nods. The three of them stand over one of the three artifacts. Harry the ring, Uma, the music box, and Gil the locket.

In Unicent a gold hue releases from the locket a sea green from the music box and a gray from the ring, The sea, the land, and the Hooks, Aaron's family. They circled them above their heads together and into the syringe. The colors swirling together peacefully. "'Arry "arriet?" The two pirates look at their younger sister, "Do ye t'ink t'at w'en Eric Ariel are free t'ey'll maybe." She mumbled.

"Speak up Calista." Harry said, picking up his little sister's head and sitting down beside her. Harriet placed a hand on her shoulder. Uma, Lonnie and Gil slipped out of the room quite as to not ruin the touching family moment.
~~~

She sniffed, "Do ye t'ink t'at w'en Eric and Ariel are free T'ey'll send us 'way or do ye think T'ey'll let us stay." The older Hooks could only look at eachother worried neither had thought of that. " 'nd do ye think Aaron'll still love us."

That ugly thought sunk into the heart of the Hook siblings, none of them new the truth, but they couldn't keep Aaron suffering because they didn't know. Neither sibling had the heart to lie to CJ.

~~~

Lonnie knocked on Aaron's door, "Go Away!"

"Aaron it's Lonnie,"

"I don't care!"

"Aaron."

The door was thrown open and immediately his hook was well Hook in her shirt His other arm pinning her to the wall, His eyes were wild hued with red. Red and Sea green falling down his cheeks and out of the corner of his mouth. "I said, leave." He whispers dangerously

Fear was clear on her face both sides of Aaron struggling, Is Ak side to gain control and His mangled side that felt bad for scaring her. "Aaron." she touched his cheek showing him the sea green that made him flinch, "Let us help you please." She begged.

"I can't," he whispered "Ella will kill me"

She picked up his head, "She hasn't killed Ryder." He still breathed heavy Panic in him, "You're not bad Aaron, you're not bad to me you care about Pan and the lost boys, you Love the Hooks. Red hair or not, Mangled mind or not, You're a hook, You're a pirate, you're an atlantian, you're Tiruilan. You're even kind of a lost boy."

He groaned and cracked his neck, his eye twitched, "I wanna be better." He cried, the red and green falling fast, "Help me Please"

"I will," She nodded Swiping away the colored tears.
~~~

He takes a few painful steps and coughs up more colorful magic by the time they get to the library his hands, face and Coat sleeve is covered in colored magic. "Aaron!" CJ shouts.

"His magic is dying." Lonnie said quickly. "He's in control now but I don't know how much longer that will be for." Harry swings his brother's Arms over his shoulders helping him sit down.

Uma Clips a bit of his red hair mixing the red magic into the syringe. "This has to be the most colorful Conxion I'll ever make." She tosses it to Harriet who slowly injects her younger brother. He screams in pain almost making Harriet stop tears fall from her eyes.

His face, previously twisted in pain, falls slack. His balled-up fist falls limp and his screams subside. Aaron moved no more. He falls forward out of the chair only for Lonnie to run over and catch him.

Now all they could do is wait and hope that he woke up.

~~~

Lonnie had stayed with him a few times but never much, she figured that was a task better suited to the Hook siblings. CJ was curled up by his head on the left, Harriet on the right and Harry at the foot of the bed like a cat for days on end.

It was nearing a week and He showed no signs of waking up, the only person they knew with strong enough healing powers was the one they were trying to keep this from.

Peter had sensed something off and sent Tinkerbell to keep him updated. So now even the little fairy was stationed with her own little bed on Aaron's dresser.

CJ sighed as she looked at her big brother.

CJ

♫Hey, brother, there's an endless road to re-discover♫

He had so much left to do he couldn't leave them yet.
~~~

Harry looked up at his little sister had Let out a soft chuckle

Harry

♫Hey, sister, know the water's sweet but blood is thicker♫

Both

♫Oh, if the sky comes falling down for you♫
♫There's nothing in this world I wouldn't do♫

Harriet chuckled at the two but joined in

Harriet & CJ

♫Hey, brother, do you still believe in one another?♫

Harry

♫Hey, sister, do you still believe in love, I wonder?♫

All

♫Oh, if the sky comes falling down for you♫
♫There's nothing in this world I wouldn't do♫

Harry

♫What if I'm far from home?♫

Harriet & CJ

♫Oh, brother, I will hear you call♫
♫What if I lose it all?♫

Harry

♫Oh, sister, I will help you out!♫

All

♫Oh, if the sky comes falling down for you♫
♫There's nothing in this world I wouldn't do♫

♫They tapped out the beat on their legs♫

Harriet & CJ

♫Hey, brother, there's an endless road to re-discover♫

Harry

♫Hey, sister, do you still believe in love, I wonder?♫

All

♫Oh, if the sky comes falling down for you♫
♫There's nothing in this world I wouldn't do♫

They kept tapping the beat smiling for the first time in a week. Tink was smiling and jingling with laughter.

Harry

♫What if I'm far from home?♫

Harriet & CJ

♫Oh, brother, I will hear you call♫
♫What if I lose it all?♫

Harry

♫Oh, sister, I will help you out!♫

All

♫Oh, if the sky comes falling down for you♫
♫There's nothing in this world I wouldn't do♫

As they finished tapping out the song the mood went somber again. It was a moment of light in a dark time. Uma had said Ryder woke up after the song, But Aaron was still asleep.

They loved their brother, Sibling acts worked at times like it did with Anna and Elsa, then why was Aaron still asleep why couldn't they wake their little brother.

It had been five days. Evie never told them what happened in the seventh as an act of positivity but as it got closer and closer to the seventh, they worried more and more.

CJ finally let herself cry, "Please wake up Aaron." She buried her face in her brother's neck. Harriet letting herself cry and doing the same thing. Harry let a few tears leak out and he leaned his head on his one bent knee, but he couldn't bring himself to get off the floor. He dropped his hook letting it roll away. He looked up as Harriet placed the compass ring back on Her younger brothers' finger.

CJ looked out the window and saw Ariel's sisters on the surface as they had been for days.

Aaron struggled against the red haired red eyed Demon over him, he kicked the thing in the stomach and sprang off his hands and onto his feet, the Hall was wet he only had on a pair of jeans, that was it, no shirt, coat or boots as soon and he could barely walk properly. As the water rushed out his counterpart came running. Aaron only had enough time to grab a sword off a suit of armor "Please wake up Aaron." He heard CJ's voice call as he dodged another thrust of a cutlass. "Please come home." she sobbed.

"I'm tryin' Callie I'm tryin'" He thrusted his own sword forward as he felt a ring placed in his hand. He dodged a parry and saw His compass ring placed on him he smiled and somehow fought even harder.

As Always Did you like the song?
Did it fit?
Did you like the picture?
Is Aaron gonna wake up?
Is he gonna win? Or will he be forever trapped him the thought scape
Like I said up next on the wheel of Trauma is Jazzy
~DarkVixen

Chapter thirty-Nine

[image] [image]

It was now a week since Aaron had fallen Under and they couldn't wait for him to wake up anymore, they had to start going for Jazzy. They let the Hooks sit it out while he hopefully healed, they let Lonnie as well who was not in much better shape.

The mood in the room was somber; it felt like a sad song. Nobody was ready to keep going but they had to push through. The only ones who were somewhat ready were Carlos, Jane and Gil but that was only because Jazzy had been a terror lately. Carlos' eyes had been glowing for a week straight now breaks. If Jazzy wasn't shut down Jane and Gil were afraid, he would pounce and try to rip her eyes from her skull.

"What can we do to fix Jazzy?" Mal asked softly, tears pooling in her own glowing eyes. She was tired all the VK's Pirates and Ryder seemed to be but none of them were really sure why. On top of that they eyes were glowing a lot if it wasn't for the fact that Ella's eyes were glowing too, reflecting Jazzy's anger, they would have been caught.

Ryder picked up his head long enough to mumble, "Audrey." Then let his head fall back onto the table like it weighed two tons.

"Audrey!" Evie Squeaked for the first time in her life not looking well put together. She had no makeup, her eyes were bloodshot, she was still in her pajamas, she had on Doug's glasses and her hair was in a messy bun. They had to remind themselves that despite not loving him in a romantic sense Evie had been basically betrothed to Aaron for the better part of five years. She cared about him and despite not really knowing how to show it he always treated her like she was a queen. "How can she help with Jazzy, I thought she was for Ella,"

"Didn't she do Ballet with Jazzy and Ella beforehand?" Doug asked

to which Ryder pointed at him and gave him a thumbs up.

His voice was muffled from the desk, but he still spoke, "They all did ballet, Audrey still knows the songs I catch her humming them to herself all the time. If we can get a family moment out of her then a childhood memory then it may work, Jazzy is crazy powerful. I can't risk what I did with Aaron. I could have taken him. He wasn't as proficient with Magic, he relied more on weapons I can't compete with Jazzy. I think she has failed safe dolls she close with my sister and it just makes sense. I'd rather not find out just yet."

"She doesn't have a Gil doll." Carlos said in a dark and menacing voice.

They all shuddered. "I think she did," Gil said skeptically.

He shook his head, "She has dolls of your twin brothers not you. She still trusts you despite the fights Simon." That voice was not Carlos.

"Los, what did you say?" Uma asked carefully

"I said" A voice still not his own, "Despite the fights Ariana still trusts Simon, Ophelia maybe listen-listen-listen" Carlos' head jerked to the side a bit before coming back. "I said" now his own voice, "Jazzy still trusts Gil despite the fights Uma maybe listen."

Mal looked around, freaked out "You guys heard that too, right?" They nodded all except Jay whose eyes were glowing orange.

"Calm down Kessem, we have to stay calm. Fix is handling Kai let's just find Ariana I wanna help Andreana soon" Jay said in a voice not his own. Then he fell back to earth, "Calm down Mal we have to stay calm. Harry is Handling Aaron let's just fix Jazzy I wanna fix Ella Soon." Andreana didn't hold the same love in that voice that Ella held in Jay's

He seemed to have no clue that he had just spoken as if he was someone else. That name again, Andreana, but what did a dark Sorceress from hundreds of years ago have to do with them now.

Why were they speaking about her and her friends as if they were them? Little did they know hundreds of years ago a group of Eleven friends, only one more than them, had sat in this exact spot in a very similar situation. With an incapacitated friend three tents down being helped by one of them as they tried to find and fix two of their own numbers.

~~~

Gil was standing on the balcony in Jazzy's room, it used to be her mother's room before her and Aladdin were married, "This is so stupid." He said as he sat down on the magic carpet under his feet. "I'm French, this whole thing seems insane."

"And a crazy dark mind mangle doesn't?" Carlos snapped from his place behind a curtain.

"This carpet flies, this piece of felt" said piece of felt promptly smacked him with the tassels.

"And your best friend can turn into a giant octopus." he accused, "Mine turns into a dragon, get a little perspective." They both heard the door open, and claws hit the ground, "Sorry about that." and Carlos hid again covering his eyes so the glow wouldn't tip off Jazzy.

The claws were that of a tiger cub named Rish that Jazzy forced Carlos to make like her, He wanted to make it rip out her throat. "Gil?" She questioned. She dropped her Jane doll off with her massive collection of others. It had pins stuck all over it but thank Olympus her chest and eyes were untouched although she may have a scar on her lip now. "What are you doing here?" It was less angry, more genuinely curious, when she wasn't trying to kill him, she was who he remembered her to be. The sweet and caring princess misplaced by the isle.

"Remember when do said you wanted to travel and see all of Agraba."

She shrugged, "briefly, such silly dreams." she scoffed looking in her mirror.
~~~

"Really? cause I can take you now."

She snapped her head and saw he was sitting on a flying carpet. "You are willing to take me after all I've done." he nodded, "And you're not afraid I'll push you off in midair."

"Not unless you want me to be."

"One the one hand being feared is fun, on the other..." she gazed at Gil and the carpet, "That does look amazing." she thinks for one second before sitting next to him. "I can't believe you did this for me. I can't believe you remembered."

He shrugged, "I remember the things pretty girls tell me."

He Tapped the carpet, and they were off. The view from above Agraba was amazing. Jazzy was fearless leaving over the edge and crawling around Gil on the other hand clutched the carpet so had it hit him again. He hated this thing. Jazzy was giggling and kneeled up, placing her arms out letting the wind rush past her.

She was beautiful. He remembered Uma said Rapunzel and Eugene's song worked on Ryder. Maybe just maybe- no that was crazy he wouldn't. But she looked so happy, there was a chance to get through to her, he had to take it.

Gil

♫I can show you the world♫
♫Shining, shimmering, splendid♫

She looked at him and unbelievably a laugh escaped her lips, he hadn't heard that laugh in years

♫Tell me, princess, now when did♫
♫You last let your heart decide?♫

Just like Aladdin had done with Jasmine he took a flower off of windowsill and placed it in her hair

♫I can open your eyes♫
♫Take you wonder by wonder♫

♫Over sideways and under♫
♫On a magic carpet ride♫

He felt so dumb but she wasnt Yelling or hitting him so that was a plus in fact she seemed to be fully enjoying it.

♫A whole new world♫
♫A new fantastic point of view♫
♫No one to tell us "No"♫
♫Or where to go♫
♫Or say we're only dreaming♫

Jazzy seemed to be having the time of her life

Jazzy

♫A whole new world♫
♫A dazzling place I never knew♫
♫But now from way up here♫
♫It's crystal clear♫
♫That now I'm in a whole new world with you♫

Gil

♫Now I'm in a whole new world with you♫

Jazzy

♫Unbelievable sights♫
♫Indescribable feeling♫
♫Soaring, tumbling, freewheeling♫
♫Through an endless diamond sky♫

♫A whole new world♫
♫Don't you dare close your eyes♫

She took Gil's hands out of his face as they plummeted downward

♫A hundred thousand things to see♫
♫Hold your breath—it gets better♫
♫I'm like a shooting star♫
♫I've come so far♫

♫I can't go back to where I used to be♫

Both

♫A whole new world♫
♫With new horizons to pursue♫
♫I'll chase them anywhere♫
♫There's time to spare♫♫
♫Let me share this whole new world with ♫

♫A whole new world♫
♫(A whole new world)♫
♫A new fantastic point of view♫
♫No one to tell us "No"♫
♫Or where to go♫
♫Or say we're only dreaming♫

♫A whole new world♫
♫Every turn a surprise♫
♫With new horizons to pursue♫
♫Every moment red-letter♫
♫I'll chase them anywhere♫
♫There's time to spare♫
♫I'll chase them anywhere♫
♫There's time to spare♫
♫Let me share this whole new world with you♫

♫A whole new world♫
♫A whole new world♫
♫That's where we'll be♫
♫That's where we'll be♫
♫A thrilling chase♫
♫A wondrous place♫
♫For you and me♫

They ended up landing back at the castle a little later. "I had a lot of fun tonight." Jazzy said, tucking a strand of purple hair that was now lightening behind her ear, "I miss doing crazy spontaneous stuff with you."

"I miss it too." Gil said, placing his hands on her waist as she stood

on her tiptoes to give him a quick kiss.

"Let's work on getting better," she decided.

He nodded, touching his head to hers, "I'd like that." He led her to her bed, "Get some rest today was exciting."

She didn't let go of his wrist, "Stay with me." It wasn't a question.

No room for an argument "Okay."

Sleeping with Jazzy was like sleeping with a cobra; it could stroke or suffocate you at any moment. It wasn't until two am that Gil was able to disentangle himself from the mess of limbs and hair that was Jazzy. Luna was posted outside and howled, alerting Carlos that Gil was in fact alive. "What happened? You should have meet me three hours ago, by the way your flirting is nauseating" He asked walking out of his room topless with Jane following who was indeed sporting a new scar across her lips in just a sports bra.

Gil glared at the comment on his flirting. he was rather good he once good bad boy harry hook's knees to buckle under him "What happened with me? What's goin' on there?" He pointed at them.

Jane blushed but Carlos, recently stoic as ever, said, "I was asleep, and she came in freaked cause the stitches on her stomach popped." Jazzy was not one to be messed with and Jane learned that the hard way. "Now what happened."

"She came to a little but not enough to talk to her. She asked me to lay with her. I couldn't leave, she left no room for arguments."

Carlos looked calmer, "Ryder said that might happen, Tomorrow is Audrey we only have three weeks to get to Ella. she's the focal point we free her we free everyone."

~~~

Lonnie was pushing herself to the absolute limit training with CJ who was a little more skilled. The Hooks had come out of Aaron's room to Stretch their legs a bit as they had been sitting in that room for a week straight. They saw Lonie rip a dummy to shreds in
~~~

frustration. This led to Lonnie and CJ fencing and Harry and Harriet Sparing.

"That was good but keep your elbow in a little more Lon and Callie you gotta lean in a bit more on that final thrust." All four whipped around to the voice. Aaron was standing in the doorway still in his Black cotton Pajamas, a pair of black slippers and a red robe. Even disheveled he looked like one of them. And disheveled he was, his hair was a disaster, he had dark bags under them. He was relying on his sword and the doorway to keep him up right. His smirk was still in place, but it was less malicious and more of an 'I got you feel to it'

Harry was the first to react, throwing himself at his little brother who warned him about the possibility of falling. CJ and Harriet followed. They were all very loud and cuddly, Lonnie felt slightly out of place among the siblings.

Aaron stepped up right in front of her, using his sword like a cane, "'ello. Darlin'"

She smiled, "Hey sailor."

This chapter while with a light and fluffy end had a devastating beginning and one that sets up more back story for Andreana
How do you like the Picture?
Did I do good?
And you Curious about who Simon, Ophelia, Kessem, Kai and Fix?
I hope so I'm trying hard here
~DarkVixen

Mini Chapter Four

[image]

Andreana ran a brush though her black hair, she smiled brightly as she pulled on her black dress and boots ready for another day's work. She loved her job as royal sorceress, and everyone loved her for it. She made them a castle, she made them a village she gave them everything.

But deep down she was worried, nothing she could do was ever enough. It was never 'thanks for fixing my house, Andreana' it was always, 'can you add another floor.' she was never thanked for her work anymore it was just expected of her. she needed to do better, she hadn't ha a day off in two years and she's doesn't remember the last time she hung out with her friends, or Lowell. She was only Seventeen and she had the weight of what had tuned into a small kingdom in her hands.

And on top of all of this, her mom hated her. She had even moved to the next kingdom over, the one that Lowell lived in, so that she didn't have to see her second daughter, her defective daughter, and she took poor Ariana with her. The girl had Kicked and screamed the whole way not wanting to be separated from her twin sister. Her mother hated that she practiced magic she thought it was the evil and that it would corrupt her daughter.

No magic wasn't evil, power was, and if anything was going to corrupt Andreana it was power, the power she had in place already. She sat at the princesses' side she helped the king better his armies, she could move mountains with a wave of her hand and burn forest with the snap of her fingers. Magic would never corrupt Andreana power would. it was more likely that she would corrupt magic. But what were the actual chances of that happening? Like a million to one, right?

There was a knock on her bedroom door, "Coming Vita" her voice was light and dreamy. her voice held no command in it whatsoever only complete and under submissiveness to her superiors. Vita was

her best friend, but she was also the princess. Andreana had to remember her place. Vita walked in in a beautiful purple gown with white elbow high glove, she held a tray with breakfast on it. Andreana laughed. "What's this?"

"Breakfast silly." Vita said placing the tray on the vanity where Andreana sat, she gave the sorceress a tight hug. "Happy birthday Rea."

"Oh, V you didn't have to do this, I'm the princess I should be the one taking care of you."

"Oh, nonsense you work so hard you deserve a day off."

"We both know I couldn't possibly do that; the village will be in a tizzy if I so much as sleep in an extra hour." she stood taking her messenger bag with heeling potions and spell books off her chair. "Thank you but i really should be going."

Vita pulled her hand, "No, no you are going to sit here and eat up. Then come down to the throne room I have a surprise for you."

Andreana shook her head fondly as her friend left the room she did as she was told though, eating then heading down to the throne room. "Vita?" she opened the door.

"Suprise!" She looked around to see all of their friend from every kingdom,

"Kessem!" She hugged the fey who had been away for quite some time now. "Kai, Ophelia, Simon, Fix" These four were Sailors who traveled up and down cost helping everyone they could, they had been gone a whole year. "Foley!" This was a thief, Thats even what his name meant. From their old village who came with then when they had to flee. he was good now but still took her things. "Bracelet." but he could never best her.

"What about me?" A girl with bright blue eyes pouted.

"Fia! I thought you left us." She laughed hugging her old friend, she was from another kingdom over like Kai.

Fia giggled, "Never,"

Vita got her attention, "There is two more people," she gestured to the thrones.

From behind the Queen' poked her sister's head. "Heya Rea, I'm home for good." She darted over to her and hugged her twin in a tight embrace. "I have a gift for you." Ariana whispered in her sisters' ear.

Andreana pulled back, "I already got what I wanted You're here,"

Ariana shook her head, and covered Andreana's eyes spinning her around, "One, two three." She removed her hands

There sitting on the floor smiling up her was Lowell in his own sorcery robes, as he worked for the royal family of Agraba with a shiny red bow on his chest, "Happy birthday Drea." She was so in shock she couldn't speak she just threw herself at him both of them tumbling to the ground laughing.

There you have it a little more on the life of Andreana, she seems like a perfectly normal sorceress no hint of evil in her. Shes a nice girl who loves her family and partner.
~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty

[image] [image]

Aaron leaned on Lonnie as he made his way to the library Both pretending, he wasn't endanger of falling if She let go of him. "The fact that you all managed to do this under my nose."

"Well, you were pretty worried about neverland."

"I still am." He said, his sword still being used as a cane. "The stones are contained but only for so long."

"I'm sure you'll figure it out." She smiled up at him. He looked away, a blush blooming on his cheeks. He was no longer the loud and proud pirate who didn't care if he was obvious. He was now an awkward stammering prince who didn't know how to deal with his feelings.

He was still loud and proud but about everything else but not this. It didn't take The Hooks and Lonnie to figure out that he wasn't all that different, just a lot less bloodlusty.

The rest didn't even notice that Aaron was awake, so this would be a surprise. Lonnie kicked the door open and pulled him in. The rest heard a clinking sound and figured one of the Hooks came out of the room and was dragging their swords. "Pick up the sword!" Evie who was still a disheveled mess, same as yesterday, yelled Irritably.

"Whoa Dove though ya'd be happy to see me." Aaron said turning the corner with Lonnie.

Evie covered her mouth in shock, the others all turning to Aaron all running up to him, Carlos knocked into his making him take a tumble, "Careful pup I'm still not as strong as I was. I was in a lot of pain; I'll get there but it's gonna take a few days."

"Does your magic still work?" Mal asked.

"As good as it can be for now," His hand glowing a light red but mostly sea green. "I lost a lot of my corrupted magic, but some of my normal magic as well, it's gonna take some time to get it back"

Ryder walked up to him, looking down at who might as well be his brother, "Your back." he said with a sad smile.

"So are you," Aaron laughed.

Ryder helped him up and pulled him into a tight hug. "I missed you."

"I missed you too. The last time I remember a clear head was when we were like seven and eight.

"Before our marks darkened," Ryder nodded.

The younger boy stepped to the side as Evie walked up. "Aaron?" Lonnie shifted uncomfortably. She knew neither had feelings for the other, but it still unnerved her. But why did it? She wasn't in love with him, so why did it bother her?

"It's me, Dove." Dove, he used to call her that when they were kids. It was his term of endearment. He was calling her peaceful and full of love. "I'm here and I'm not off my rocker anymore. I'm not gonna cut your boyfriend to ribbons."

"Oh, I'm not her um b-boyfriend." Doug stuttered. It was the truth; they hadn't made anything official yet.

Aaron grabbed Evie's hand walking her over with his sword and pushed her into Doug, "yeah ya are."

Evie laughed, "yeah you are." she kissed his cheek.

"Alright, Audrey day." Aaron said, rubbing his hands together, placing his arm back around Lonnie.

~~~~

"Ryder, what is this fox doing in my palace!?" Jazzy snapped.
~~~~

"Reprograming." Ryder said casually. "Trying to mess with her head a little." Audrey stood neck to him with her arm in his tight grip, Tight enough to leave bruises. He was not over how she treated them. "She already spent time with me and Aaron."

That was half true; she had spent time with both evil and good Ryder, and there wasn't much difference. Yeah, he didn't threaten her life, but he wasn't happy with her he still yelled and hit the bars of her cell with his rings on and most importantly he left her down there.

At first, she thought it was a play for power. It was only after a week did, she realize that Ryder was truly just trying to make her see the consequences of her actions and it was only because Chad of all people was allowed to leave the Dungeons.

"Come on, you've learned." Ryder said unlocking the cell and grabbing Chad's arm. When asked what he meant Ryder responded, "you've suffered enough you figured what you did was wrong, this might have been a harsh punishment but it's better than what my sister would have dealt out. I have surveillance charms I can tell you've been mad at yourself."

After that Audrey realized that's why they were still down there despite Ryder's change in behavior. At first it started off as a way to get out of there but then she actually started to see what she had done as wrong. She started kicking herself realizing that there was no need for her to act the way she was.

"Might as well hand her off to the powerful before she gets destroyed by Ella and Jay."

Jazzy laughed, "Oh please Jay's gone soft, told Ella but all I got was this." She lifted her hair and revealed what could only be a new scar from a dagger on her neck. "But fine whatever I'll take the snake."

Ryder handed Audrey off to Jazzy with a warning look, then made his way back to his car where Uma Mal and Ben were waiting. "We dropped Audrey in the tiger enclosure now, why are we all here?" Uma, who was in the passenger seat asked.

"Well, I thought it only right to treat my wonderful girlfriend to a nice Dinner, and I wanted to give Mal another 'I'm sorry you had to deal with me' present so I brought her and her boy toy along for a double date."

"Where are we going?" Mal asked excitedly.

"Le Flore." He answered, it was the nicest and probably the most expensive restaurant in Auradon.

Ben's eyes widened, "That place is crazy expensive for a date."

"Only the best for my wonderful girlfriend and lovely friends."

"You're gonna let me help pay right."

Ryder let out a loud laugh. "No, you made me king you're broke," Ben blushed a deep red in embarrassment as he realized this was true. He hadn't thought about that as he handed over the crown. He was more worried about the well-being of his kingdom. Mal gripped his hand making it known that she didn't care about that," he smiled at her warily.

Audrey was following Jazzy around like a lost puppy, "Do you remember when we took ballet?" She tried as it was very awkward with no talking.

"Vaguely." She said sitting at her desk pulling a dagger out of the flat surface. "What are you playing at?" she asked.

Audrey gulped lowly, "Nothing. I was just wondering if you remembered any of them."

"Just one." she answered lowly "Seems Ryder and Aaron shook you up well."

Audrey's eyes lit up, "Wanna do it with me." she grasped the hand Jazzy had on the desk in hers.

She saw Jazzy's eyes widen and bring down the dagger. Audrey moved her hand just in time as the queen stabbed the desk between her pointer and middle finger. She blinked several times, her face

contorting in pain for a moment before snapping back. "If I do it will that keep you from touching me." It seemed the familial moment with Gil had softened her a bit considering she was giving Audrey a change and not ripping right into her. Aurey nodded fast, extremely shaken up. "Fine!"

"Which do you remember?" she said coming back just like Uma taught her. She mumbled it. "What?"

"Wonderland."

Audrey clapped, "That's my favorite one. Come on."

"How do you know where the studio is in my own castle?"

"We used to practice here all the time, you me and Ella. I miss those times," she said solemnly. "Believe it or not I missed all of you. I was really afraid that you guys were like the Villains that raised you. I needed to realize that we're not out parents." Audrey said, holding her hands.

It was an odd sight on one side. There was a girl in a long black shredded bottom skirt that stopped at her mid-calf in black Mary jane boots with a purple belly shirt with a back Bandana with a skull on it. On the other was a girl in a pink dress with her long brown hair only held in place with a blue headband and in a pair of blue heels.

"Come on, let's Dance."

"Oh, I don't remember the dance, just the Song."

"Then let's sing it. The acoustics in here sound good."

She huffed, "If it gets you to stop touching me without permission," she said annoyed. But Audrey noticed that it took longer for her to react than last time.

Audrey

♫Welcome to wonderland♫
♫We've got it all♫

♫Potions and pastries that make you grow tall♫
♫Forests and cottages, castles and cards that can talk♫

She looked to Jazzy to continue. She huffed but did so sitting crisscrossed on the floor where Audrey was sitting with her legs stretched out crossed at the ankle.

Jazzy

♫Welcome to wonderland♫
♫Look where you're at♫
♫Maddest of hatters♫
♫The Cheshire Cat♫
♫Magical cabins and lovely white rabbits with clocks♫

Both

♫Dancing through a dream♫
♫Underneath the stars♫
♫Laughing till the morning comes♫
♫Everyone that leaves has a heavy heart♫
♫Oooh, won-derland I love♫

Jazzy's eyes glazed over with a magical Hue. Audrey noticed but pushed though.

Audrey

♫Welcome to wonderland♫
♫I'll be your guide♫
♫Holding your hand under sapphire skies♫
♫Let's go exploring or we could just go for♫
♫A walk♫

Jazzy clearly was only half present and pushed through her part slightly broken

Jazzy

Welcome to wonderland
Where should we go
There's a tea party along down the road

Make an appearance and maybe they'll sing us a song

Both

♫Dancing through a dream♫
♫Underneath the stars♫
♫Laughing till the morning comes♫
♫Everyone that leaves has a heavy heart♫
♫Oooh, won-derland I love♫

Magic spiraled in Jazzy's eyes, a swirl of Purple and Blue. Her head whipped back and forth as she tried to fight it off.

Audrey

♫Nothing around here is quite♫
♫As it seems♫
♫Not sure if anything is real or♫
♫A dream♫
♫And the only thing sure from the start♫
♫Is the song that's inside of your heart♫
♫Don't let♫
♫It leave♫

Jazzy grabbed the sides of her head, "Stop!" her voice was almost deep and monstrous, if it wasn't for her slight accent that Faciliar had she wouldn't even know it was hers. It was clear her 'friends' were trying to keep her tethered to the dark.

Audrey remembered what Ryder had told her, *"No matter what she says or does do not stop the memory, I don't care if i come back and your vocal cords are gone if Jazzy hasn't told you Carlos or Jane what she needs by the time I get back you will see what truly makes me a VK."*

She pushed on not wanting to find out.

Audrey

♫If this was a dream, then at least I've got♫
♫Memories for when morning comes♫
♫Now that I must leave with a heavy heart♫
♫Oooh, won-derland I love♫

Jazzy fall to the floor with a loud thud Audrey dropping next to her. Carlos came running in, "Was this supposed to happen!?" she snapped at Carlos.

"They all had pretty negative reactions but as far as i know none this sever." He dropped to his knees next to Jazzy's withering form, she was hitting her head, growling and clawing at her face. "They usually only do this once they get some kind of control.

"I am powerful!" Jazzy screeched. She sat up gasping, her hair fading to its natural brown and her eyes glowing light blue, "Both sides of me are." She said in a calm leveled voice. Her body no longer shaking or withering, her cheek was bleeding from her nails but otherwise she looked perfectly fine there was no indication of pain.

As always did you like the song?
Did it fit?
did you like the picture?
what are you most worried about?
Did the cliffhanger confuse or anger you?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty-one

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *"I am powerful!" Jazzy screeched. She sat up gasping, her hair fading to its natural brown and her eyes glowing light blue, "Both sides of me are." She said in a calm leveled voice. Her body no longer shaking or withering, her cheek was bleeding from her nails but otherwise she looked perfectly fine there was no indication of pain.*

~~~now~~~

Carlos placed his arm around her back, "Jazz." Her head snapped towards him and away from Audrey. "How are you so calm? Ryder had said he was in excruciating pain and Aaron wouldn't stop shaking and screaming."

A small grunt escaped her but otherwise nothing, "He" her right eyes twitched, and she winced a bit, "he's not as strong. I'm not one of the boys, they're weaker than me and Ella. they're younger and Aaron rarely used his magic, so he didn't practice much, Ryder was young, and the Mangle was taking its time one him," she twitched a bit. "But I don't have to hurry, it's taking a lot of magic to keep her at bay. I'm not Ella."

"Are you not in pain or something?" Audrey asked, confused.

"Oh no I am in excruciating pain." she nodded, "But that's not important. I can see through Her eyes, And I've learned to keep my thoughts and hers separate. I've noticed things." She looks off into space for a moment before coming back, "When we were in the museum, she didn't see it, but I did. The Golden Scarab that Jafar used to locate the cave of wonders is there. Find it. Don't put it together, find genie. You should be able to find him though Jordan when you find him have him look over the Scarab the magical signature is dimmed. If it's dimmed enough Evie and Gil can bring it into my head and find me."
~~~

Carlos stops her, "I thought only your magic worked in your mind."

She nodded grunting a bit, Carlos gave her his hand and she gripped it tight. She let out a small scream and let herself fall into Carlos' chest heaving deeply.

Gil and Jane, who had taken a day to themselves. walk through the door to the palace hoping that Carlos had gotten through to Jazzy. As he walks to his room, they hear a scream and Gil being Gil runs towards it. Jane looks conflicted but hearing that it was one of pain and not a screaming match between Carlos and Jazzy she ran towards it as well. She sees Gil standing outside the studio hiding behind the wall. "Gil?",

He doesn't answer so she tiptoes and looks over his shoulder. Her whole world crashes down in a moment. Carlos kneeling on the floor with Jazzy's face cuddled into his neck. He held her protectively and his eyes never left her. Audrey looked uncomfortable in her current situation like she shouldn't be there. Gil left Immediately after not saying a word to Jane as he left and slammed his door behind him.

No one in the studio heard as both were tentatively listening to Jazzy as she was losing her grip. "Magic objects that come from my background will, your magic is foreign and won't work. The magic of the Scarab is from my background."

"Your background, that means-"

She nods, "Jay, my magic comes from a genie Jafar was a Genie. Listen." She screams louder and in more pain this time. Carlos unconsciously pulled her closer; he spent so many years under her influence that was not so easily forgotten. "Not all is as it seems, something else has to be going on, there's no way fairy godmother in all her goodie goodie glory." she spat the last part of that sentence. "Took down Jafar and an all-powerful genie. She was going against the fairy council, and I'm worried she had hurt some dark Fairies. That needs to be found out and do it before Ella does. She already suspects the fairy god mother and if she finds out she'll drag her back though the veil and rip out her eyes herself."

"I have one more Question Jazz." she looks up at Carlos who's basically cradling her, "What do you mean why does everyone keep saying they're not Ella what did she do? We need to know before we get to her."

Jazzy's eyes glaze over, "Ella could use her magic on the Isle." Carlos' eyes widened. "She just couldn't leave. Her magic is dark and ancient; it's something I've never seen before. It's dangerous and scares me a lot. I don't know where she learned such dark magic and I don't know if I want to, it's corrupting her mental state. We have to-" She coughs, her magic wasn't red, this wasn't good. "Save her. She's clawing her way back up my throat and she coughs again. Just tell her i fell and started heaving She'll say I'm sick and go lay down."

"Hold on Jazzy we're coming."

She looks up at him and smiles, "I know" she squeezes his hand, "I trust you, why do you think I chose you, I knew you could become great, I let our magic tie together because I knew one day you could save me. I'm so proud of what you've become Carlos."

Every bad thing she ever said to him, all the screaming and crying and shouting. All the times he had broken something or smashed a mirror because of her, none of it mattered anymore. It was never her; it was always this twisted version of her. Jazzy really didn care for and believe in him. "I promise I will help you." Tears brimmed his eyes.

She reached up weakly and whipped them away, only for her hand to drop limply for a moment then her to scream again her head whipping in all directions, "I am strong, I am in control." she shouted deeply, and her hair turned back to purple, and she fell unconscious.

"Did she knock herself out?" Audrey asked disturbed.

"Must of." he lifted her up bridal style and brought her to her to her bed. He closed the door quietly, "Let go get the others."

They grabbed Gil and Jane. Carlos' mind was a hurricane right now,

he was too worried to notice that neither was very happy with him.

~~~

"I need to go in with Evie and Gil," Jay said pointing to himself, "I have to go to Agraba." Audrey was no involved in the group though she wasn't sure she wanted to as Tinkerbell was giving her a mean look

"Why is agraba the part that's bothering you?" Ben asked.

He looked down, "I hadn't been able to face who my father taught me I should have been yet. I'm a king of sorts but not the kind he wanted. I won but not the way he wanted."

"Our parents taught us to seize everything we want but if it was against their way it was a no go," Evie told him.

"We have to steal again," Gil said as he looked out the window brooding "cause if word gets back to Ella that we took that thing she'll know what's going on."

The room was silent for a moment, "he's right," Aaron who was still relatively weak. "No one's a better thief than a pirate."

Lonnie pulled him back down, "Anyone who doesn't need their sword to walk is a better thief pretty boy."

He ignored the insult and smiled, "Pretty?" She blushed and pushed his face away from her. He chuckled while sitting back.

"You may be on to something though." Jay smirked, "I did this for a living but there's no way I can do it in a high-tech place like that, we need tiny and nerdy." he said pointing to CJ and Carlos respectively.

CJ pulled out her sword and held it up, "Move the finger or you lose the finger." He pulled back a little scared of the tiny Pirate.

Tink, who was sitting on Aaron's head, started speaking her bell like voice ringing. "She said you also have to get Jordan to trust you and believe you're not gonna kill her parents and that we're not very
~~~

liked at the moment, thanks Tink." He said the last part sarcastically and she chimed out a just as sarcastic, 'you're welcome.'

"So much to do and only three weeks to get it done"

"We're running on no time and no steam guys." Ryder looked up, tears were in his eyes, and he looked ragged, "I don't think we're gonna get this done. I'm worried about Ella, what if-" he trailed off, "what if we fail."

Jay shook his head, "No,"

"Jay."

"No, no, no." He stood and left the room Carlos on his tail."

"Jay!" he stopped mid hallway." We have to think of the possibility that Ella might not be okay."

He shook his head "I don't want to. I spent so long just going along with this because she loved me, and she wanted to give us more that I didn't think there was anything wrong. she saved me so much, I need to save her Carlos" Jay looked up crying, Carlos had never seen him so weak. "I never thought that there was more to her cause I thought it was stripped away young. I hate that I was so blind, and I won't fail. Even if I have to claw away at her mind myself, I will find a way to help her."

Carlo had always been a boy who had to deal with the harsh realities, so he never believed in true love or soul mates. But this right here Jay's dedication and love for Ella, it made him believe that maybe, just maybe, there was such a thing. Maybe love wasn't some magical thing by nature, maybe it was its people who gave it magic. And maybe Jay could give his love magic and Save Ella after all.

Sorry it's so late I had a long day and a lot of distractions
as always did you like the picture?
I have a little tension between Carlos and Jazzy there
Do you think this will turn into a problem?
and what do they need the Scarab for?

~DarkVixen

Mini Chapter Five

[image]

Ella sat at her vanity bushing out her long blond and black hair, she gave a tense smile in the mirror. She got up and moved to pull on her black dress which was a double spaghetti strap sundress dress with a sheer black cape that fell bust below her shoulders that connected to a collar, she pulled on a pair so silver heels and looked in the mirror to put on her Jewlery.

The voice in her head was shouting again, it always was these days. It wasn't mad at her it's just wanted it to be her birthday already. She knew why.

Today would be an easy day, no meetings, no dealing with prisoners, and the Vk's were all settled in. The older ones had jobs the younger ones were in school, and their wrong doings were being monitored so she could create accommodations.

Ella was born to be a queen, so she took her roll in stride. She played with grace and poise just like she did everything. Say what you want about her, but she was never a mess and rarely screamed. She had the weird princess ability to wake up perfect, she only ever yelled at her inner circle no one outside the palace knew about this. She was breaking ground just like Rapunzel did.

There were so many secrets though. So many held from the people, from her inner circle, hidden from Jay. Heck they were hidden from herself. She knew what she was doing, she had a very intricate plan, and it required every bit of her concentration at all times. weather she be away or asleep she must always be on the clock. It was tiring she was exhausted but she couldn't do anything about it. No one could ever know not until it was all over.... successfully.

That's the thing she had to be successful for any of this to be worth it. If she didn't come out of this the way she anticipated she would have waisted the better part of four years.

At the end of all of this weather she was successful or not Ella would lose, and she knew it. she just had to make sure that she lost in the way that *she* thought was better for everyone else.

But what was the plan? Was it for good or evil? Did she think what was good for everyone was evil? Or was she really trying? Was there even a difference anymore? What did she think was better?

Ella had come to the conclusion that no magic was dark and light it was just the intent of the caster and while that mentality could be wonderfully groundbreaking it also gave no limitations. So, there was really no telling who Ella was or what her end goal was anymore.

There wasn't even any indication that her consciousness hadn't completely fused with Andreana. Was she demon or was the centuries old sorceress? Was Andreana actually the good guy trying to reign Ella in? Or was it the other way around? did they agree or disagree? not even Ella was sure.

"Hey Ella."

She snapped out of her thoughts and looked to her door, "Hi Uncle Varian." She smiled.

"Wanna help me in the shop today kiddo." She nodded giddily and decided to allow herself to be a kid for a little longer. Just a moment she could forget what was coming for her.

"Come on Vera you're coming too." She said picking up the Raccoon that was sleeping on her bed. Varian chuckled and ruffled her hair unaware that he would possibly lose his god daughter a second time, and if he did there was no bringing her back.

So many questions and no time to answer any of them. so many problems and none with a clear solution. All with come to light even if it means shrouding the world in darkness

A little more on what goes on in Ella's head and the realization that there is not clear answer on whether Ella is the good guy or not. the lines are blurred for her there is no good and evil

not visibly anyway

As always did you like the picture?

I was gonna out a song, but it didn't fit.

There should be another chapter up later today

~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty-two

[image]

Last time on Darkhearts: *Carlos had always been a boy who had to deal with the harsh realities, so he never believed in true love or soul mates. But this right here Jay's dedication and love for Ella, It made him believe that maybe, just maybe, there was such a thing. Maybe love wasn't some magical thing by nature, maybe it was its people who gave it magic. And maybe Jay could give his love magic and Save Ella after all.*

~~~Now~~~

CJ and Carlos were the ones who were set to steal the Scarab and honestly CJ was Nervous. She hadn't stolen anything under such a serious lock and key not to mention if Ella found out she was to blame. If anything happened to her family, it would be her fault.

Carlos could see this Anxiety; he's worn this Anxiety so while they were getting ready to leave Carlos pulled her aside and spoke to her. "Hey" she looked up at him. "Everything is gonna be fine."

"And If it isn't? What does Ella find out?"

He gives her a tight hug, "she won't I promise." Jane had put all the thoughts of Carlos and Jazzy out of her head; she didn't want that to affect her. It was probably nothing and if something happened to him tonight without her apologizing for the cold shoulder, she would never forgive herself.

She stopped at the door and reached for the handle "I'm making sure nothing happens to you." she jumped back, "no matter what." She opens the door a crack and sees CJ with her face buried in Carlos' chest. He holds her close. Maybe now wasn't a great time.

CJ was younger than Carlos, almost two years, so now he could understand what the others always felt for him and Ryder the sense of protectiveness. And he swears that he will keep her safe.
~~~

The two of them step out of the room where Mal Meets them, "here put these on their clocking bracelets. If worse comes to worst, click the stones and it will render you invisible, you'll both be able to see each other's outlines, and book it." she clipped one with a red stone on Carlos and one with a black stone on CJ.

"How did you make these?" she smirks, and side eyed the dragon eye.

He shook his head and looked to CJ, "Ready."

She shook her head, "Nope but I don't think I'll ever be."

~~~

Carlos and CJ came up to the museum. "There's no guards this time." Carlos pulled the door and it opened to problems, "Here," he hands her a Bluetooth. "I'm gonna stay here and disable any alarms, you're gonna go get the Scarab."

He grabbed the security book and chair and sat down. "Wait, what's that?" CJ asked, panic rising in her voice.

Carlos looked at the camera but saw nothing. "There's nothing your nerves are just acting up, but I'll keep an eye out. She nods, "The Scarab is in the heroes Gallery under a glass container in the agraba exhibit which is just a smaller part of the four kingdoms exhibits. Don't remove the case until I tell you too." he pushes her towards the heroes Gallery. He disables the Cameras as she goes. Making sure there's no evidence of her being in the museum.

He Hears her suck in a breath just as she gets close to the heroes Gallery, "What's wrong?"

"Ella's here."

"What?" He asks panicked he switches cameras and sees the Corona exhibit next to the Agraba one and Indeed Ella was near it.

CJ presses herself against the wall, tears in her eyes. She presses the bracelets and tiptoes past Ella, "I know it's here it has to be." she hissed in a high voice that didn't sound like Her's.
~~~

"It's not, I'm telling you." her own voice said.

"Where else would it be."

"In the vaults, my parents weren't stupid."

"No but they were vengeful, and my medallion was a curse to anyone who wasn't in the family line I gave it to. I gave it to your family with Vita not Adam and Belle."

There was a humed, "Is that why we won."

A cackle, "No you're all just powerful."

As she walks away the voices become quieter. She didn't even get a chance to take in the words she was way too scared of Ella. She made her way to the Agraba exhibit and found the Scarab. "Carlos, I found it." she whispered into her earpiece.

"Gimme one second. I'm disabling the alarm system now; we can't risk anything with Ella to close. I can put up a remote illusion until she leaves but my magic isn't as strong as hers. If she hears an alarm, she'll check everything." Carlos fingers typed away going faster than he ever has. He needed to get CJ out of there soon. "Got it go ahead. Whatever you do, don't put the two pieces together."

"Okay." She pulls the glass covering off the top and sets it on the floor, she grabs the Scarab and places the two halves in different pockets.

"Good now get out of there Ella is still by her parents' statues." She fixes the case and sees as Carlos puts up an illusion of the Scarab.

She sighs and tiptoes through the four-kingdom exhibit, "No way" she freezes between Belle and Adams' statues. "The utter blatant disrespect." she turned towards Ella whose face was red, wondering if she could see through the cloaking spell. Ella was right in front of her towering over CJ's small figure.

Ella wasn't taller than her not at all, in fact the two were the exact same height. It was Ellas power and CJ's fear that made Ella appear taller and her feel smaller. The level of Authority Ella had terrified

the girl who had been traumatized by Authority from Hook her whole life.

"How despicable," she glared. CJ gulped and waited for the inevitable. It never came, Ella instead of Grabbing the youngest Hook grabbed a medallion off of the neck of Belle's statues and ran her fingers over the cool metal, "This it?"

Right before her eyes Ella's hair felt black and straight and her eyes blacked out. "Yes! Yes! It had a protection spell on it that would protect us from harm. I can't believe he was using at as piece of Jewlery for that witch." Only she didn't say 'witch.'

She was suddenly grabbed from behind and hand over her mouth stopping her from screaming but all she sees is the outline. Carlos dragged her backwards slowly. He keeps a hand on his hip where he has a dagger in the waistband of his shorts.

They both continue to back away from the gallery hearing Ella's praises. Carlos had already set up the computers again so the two of them just booked it out of the museum.

~~~

The Scarab was laying on the table in front of them, but no one was worried about that. "Ella's hair and eyes did that a lot on the Isle. Are you sure it's not like a final stage or something for the curse?" Aaron asked.

"No clue it doesn't say anything about it but just about everyone Andreana ever cursed with it was either cured or uncurable already. And a lot of them died not long after the curse was put on them, her magic overloading them." Doug said as Evie read over her shoulder.

Jay felt his heart sink and his whole-body tense. "You're telling me it's a possibility that Ella could die."

The whole room froze, none of them had even thought of that as a possibility. They lived in a world where good always won, the good guys never died and that's what they were trying to be. They were trying to be the good guys, everything they had done since the
~~~

coronation had been in the name of good. If Ella died, not only would it shatter them, but it would also break their fairytale world. Their rules of their lives would no longer apply, and all out anarchy would ensue.

Ella on the other hand wasn't worried at all, she knew exactly where she was going.

this one felt a little messy, especially since I said CJ's name a lot
It was more i had to change it
This was supposed to be out last ling but after the mini chapter I collapsed
As always how did you like the picture?

Any predictions?

And what are you excited to see next?

~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty-three

[image] [image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *The whole room froze, none of them had even thought of that as a possibility. They lived in a world where good always won, the good guys never died and that's what they were trying to be. They were trying to be the good guys, everything they had done since the coronation had been in the name of good. If Ella died, not only would it shatter them, it would break their fairy tale world.*

Ella on the other hand wasn't worried at all, she knew exactly where she was going.

~~~Now~~

Ryder was able to find Jordans lamp, no problem, it was in her dorm at Auradon Prep. Getting her out was the hard part. When she realized he wasn't possessed anymore she started shouting at him. "No, you took over a kingdom! You locked up my friends! I know it wasn't all possession!" Her voice was sharp and scary. He dropped the lamp, "Did you just drop me!? You are quite possibly the worst excuse for a prince I have ever met."

"Have you met Chad."

"Hey." Said prince was sitting on the library floor with Evie and Doug who agreed to help him read up on everything he forced Evie to do for him before Coronation. The fact that she was being nice to him depicted the fact that he didn't deserve it baffled him.

"Sorry."

She came out of her lamp and stood cross armed glaring at him. "You took over a kingdom, overthrew my friend, imprisoned my friends, and is that my birthright jewel." She pointed to the necklace warped around his hand. "And you expect me to help you."

He sighed, rubbing his eyes, "This was a peace offering." He said
~~~

handing it to her, "I got it after I was un-spelled. Carlos brought it to me." She looked over to the small boy who was sitting crisscross on the window with a white wolf on his left and a black wolf on his right, a dog on his lap and a Blue Jay on his head. CJ was sitting front of him playing with the wolves.

He waved at her with a bright smile, he would have looked completely unthreatening if it wasn't for his eyes, his red glowing eyes. "Is he okay?" she whispered.

"No, I'm in the middle of a mental breakdown." he announced, opening the window and allowing a robin to land next to the blue jay. "I got it off Jazzy between her having it and Ryder not being possessed; it was the better option."

She shook her head, "I'm still not taking you to my father."

"Please, I need this so I can try and piece my family back together." He literally falls to his knees and begs, "I don't have much time, my sister is in trouble, she'll be stuck like this in a few weeks, and I'll lose her forever. I only have so much time I can't lose my big sister Jordan."

Aaron who can now walk on his one but still limping kneeled next to him, "We're all we ever had, could you please just give us a chance, help us and we'll do better."

She looked at them but shook her head, "I'm sorry I don't trust you. I can sense so much underneath that makes you unstable. I can't trust you with my father." She sank back into her lamp.

Uma and Lonnie move closer to Ryder and Aaron. The pirate stays planted so Lonnie could hug him. He fell back and pulled her into his lap silently crying into her shoulder. Ryder on the hand stormed out of the library.

Jay and Evie rushed forward, "Give him an hour or two to cool off."

"He's still.... unstable." Evie said carefully, "he's probably breaking things as we speak. Or his magic is lashing out"

~~~
~~~

Uma walked in later, and indeed his room was in shambles. A mug from this morning flew past her head and shattered on the wall. He was sitting in his bed, his eyes a swirl of blue and gold, his right-hand glowing gold, his left blue, his face set in a hard glare at the wall. The contents of his room were swirling around him in a circle. He wasn't himself; he was in a dangerous headspace. This must have been what Jordan was talking about.

She held up a hand and it glowed purple making everything freeze in place. His head snapped to her with a glare, his left hand whipped out and pushed her back. She was thrown against the wall and his eyes flared fully gold, "Oh my gods."

He jumped up and ran to Uma, "I'm so sorry."

He picked her up bridal style and placed her on his bed, "Ryder I'm fine just a little Dizzy."

After a moment Ryder spoke up again, "I know my Jordan doesn't wanna help me." She turned to him with her head tilted. Ryder sat in the bed with Uma's hands in his, "I wanted this to happen we all did we wanted Adam and Belle in pain, we wanted everyone to feel how we felt, we're horrible people." he sighed rubbing his forehead, "Deep down it wasn't just the curse I hate them, and I wanted to suffer. I still kinda do."

Jordan was standing outside his door; she was about to knock but she heard him mention her name. "Ryder, they did terrible things" Umas' voice came. "You have every right to have wanted them to hurt the way you did."

Ryder shook his head, "But I still want them to Uma, I still want them to hurt, I still feel like they deserve it." he laid his head on her lap and she ran her fingers through her hair, "they made so many of us suffer I want to hurt them I want to do the same to them." he sobbed out. "My head is still a mess and you guys managed to fix it. You guys pulled me out, but it still feels like I'm Under the rubble of a train wreck."

♫Laying in the silence♫

♫Waiting for the sirens♫

♫Signs, any signs I'm alive still♫

♫I don't wanna lose it♫

♫But I'm not getting through this♫

♫Hey, should I pray, should I pray♫

♫Yeah, to myself, to a God?♫

♫To a saviour who can...♫

His head hurts, he clutched the sides of his head and rocks back and forth. Uma picked him up and leaned her forehead on his kissing his temples.

♫Unbreak the broken♫

♫Unsay these spoken words♫

♫Find hope in the hopeless♫

♫Pull me out of the train wreck♫

♫Unburn the ashes♫

♫Unchain the reactions♫

♫I'm not ready to die, not yet♫

♫Pull me out of the train wreck♫

♫Pull me out, pull me out, pull me out♫

♫Pull me out, pull me out♫

He wished he could take back all the words he spoke, unbreak everything he's destroyed.

♫Underneath our bad blood♫

♫We still got a sanctum♫

♫Home, still a home, still a home here♫

♫It's not too late to build it back♫

♫'Cause a one in a million chance♫

♫Is still a chance, still a chance♫

♫And I would take those odds♫

He had one chance to change everything he's done, and he can't let it go not with the answers so close.

♫Unbreak the broken♫

♫Unsay these spoken words♫

♫Find hope in the hopeless♫

♫Pull me out of the train wreck♫

♫Unburn the ashes♫

♫Unchain the reactions♫

♫I'm not ready to die, not yet♫

♫Pull me out of the train wreck♫

♫Pull me out, pull me out, pull me out♫

Every day he felt like he would end up back there suffocating underneath the darkness, dying. He couldn't imagine how his sisters felt.

♫Pull me out, pull me out, pull me out♫

♫You can say what you like 'cause see, I would die for you♫

♫I'm down on my knees, and I need you to be my God♫

♫Be my help, be a saviour who can♫

He hated Asking this of Jordan but it's what he needed. He needed her help.

♫Unbreak the broken♫

♫Unsay these reckless words♫

♫Find hope in the hopeless♫

♫Pull me out of the train wreck♫

♫Unburn the ashes♫

♫Unchain the reactions♫

♫I'm not ready to die, not yet♫

♫Pull me out of the train wreck♫

♫Pull me out, pull me out, pull me out♫

♫Pull me out, pull me out, pull me out♫

Jordan huffed, "freaking feelings." She snapped before marching off trying to find someone else, anyone else, when she came out of the lamp, she was alone on the windowsill in the library.

Finally, she ran into Mal, "Oh Jordan you're out of the lamp. If you're ready to talk to them, Ryder's room is that way and Aaron is in the kitchen stress eating."

"Where's Evie?"

"In the kitchen with Aaron."

She nodded and ran off having known this Castle like the back of her hand. She burst in surprising Evie who dropped her croissant. "Oh no." She sniffed.

"Evie."

"It was full of chocolate."

"Evie."

"That's so sad."

"Evie!" she snapped back to life and looked at Jordan with her arms crossed and a glare. "I'll take you to my father." Her eyes widened, "Just you though. I don't trust the others." Aaron snorted bitterly, "What!" She snapped.

He turned to her with a hard glare on his face, "I'm the least dangerous of all of us. Maybe Harry. Evie is...." Her glare made him trail off, "Let's just say she's more capable of hurting you than me."

Jordan gave him the same look, "She's nicer than you." She tried to appear taller.

Which didn't work as he sprang up towered over her. Evie sensing the power of her former partner. Lonnie who was eating next to Aaron pulled him back as Evie pushed Jordan away for her safety. "As I'm the one going into Jazzy and Ella's heads it's best if I go."

He didn't respond, just sat back down with Lonnie running her fingers through his hair and whispering sweet nothings to him. "Tomorrow." Jordan said like it would be the definitive.

Evie looked at her like she was crazy, "Nope, we don't have much time to free Ella and we need to free Jazzy before her and we already lost a day because of you, we go now." Evie said in a dark and scary voice she took her jacket off the back of the chair and walked out. Jordan was wondering now if she should've taken Aaron.

As always did you like the picture?

Did you like the song?

Did it fit?

thank you leitoravoraz16 for the song. I love it and now play it always

What are you most excited for?

Any predictions?

What line did you relate to most?

Chapter Forty-four

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *"Tomorrow." Jordan said like it would be the definitive.*

Evie looked at her like she was crazy, "Nope, We don't have much time to free Ella and we need to free Jazzy before her and we already lost a day because of you, we go now." Evie said in a dark and scary voice she took her jacket off the back of the chair and walked out. Jordan was wondering now if she should've taken Aaron.

~~~Now~~~

It wasn't really all that hard-to-find Genie and his wife Eden; Evie was sure if they knew the address, they could have found the way. "I have never been more aggravated in my life."

Jordans Parents were in the front yard of their house, on the outskirts of Agaraba, in human form. They were less in the loop about what was happening. Eden was trying to garden, a hard task in the sand, and Genie was reading. "Makes you wish you had relied less on me." Jordan snorted upon herring their daughter the parent perked up.

"No, you do **not** get to crack jokes." they heard a soft yet sharp voice snap. Both got to their feet if they needed to define their daughter. "Because of you we're behind schedule we need to get through to Jazzy so we can get thought to Ella and so she doesn't cut off Audreys fingers."

Hearing his Goddaughters name made Geine spring back into his natural form and rush to Evie, "You know what happened to Jazzy."

The poor girl was being man handled by the blue genie.

"Sorry dear." Eden said now in her natural form, "We haven't heard her name in a while."
~~~

The queen raised an eyebrow, "Are you not sure what's going on in the city."

"We try not to bother with politics anymore after Al got all sad when they took Jazzy, even Aziz wasn't the same." Genie said very fast.

"She's actually in power now." Evie had to grab ahold of Their tails before they could fly off, "hold on she's not in the right headspace and may kill you before you can even talk to her."

"What do you mean?" Eden asked defensively. "Jazzy's and angel."

She shook her head, "Not anymore, Jazzy's mental state is in complete disarray. She's under and mind mangle." the two gasp, "I'm assuming you know what that is, and I don't have to go into detail.

Eden nodded, "Oh we know what a mind mangle is even we can't undo it."

"It's the darkest magic in the book. How did little Al get placed under it?"

"Not sure all we know is that she is, and we need to save her, we got through to her and she asked us to get this and bring it to you to see how damp the signature is." She pulled out the two halves of the Scarab.

Genie picked it up carefully, "It's pretty bad I don't know what you're going to do with it."

"I just need it to work in her mind."

Genie threw his hand out "Whoa stop the parade! That's really dangerous with a mind mangle going."

"It's the only way, I've already done it twice for Ryder and Aaron and I knew Jazzy is way more powerful but it's my one shot at fixing her."

Genie tightening his lips as Eden placed a hand on his shoulder,

"Alright, Jazzy's head opened up to the castle, which is her imagination palace, when she was a kid, it was filled with imaginary friends, crazy animals and made-up spells, now i have no idea what could be in there. Then there's the ocean where Al almost got drowned. That's her family gallery, again it was filled with Pictures of Al, Jas, Aziz and her, now i don't know. After that is the desert, which is her dreamscape and where her emotions vault is, once you get there, you're gonna wanna use that Scarab and find her thoughtscape. It should be the cave of wonders and if you need that it still is. Her thoughts were always well organized and guarded even as a child. The mark of a great hero."

"Or a dangerous Villain." she said gravely.

"Maybe we'll get lucky, and they'll all get eaten but the cave." Jordan mumbled.

"Jordan!" her mother snapped.

The genie girl crossed her arms and flipped her ponytail, "What you want me to be happy about this!"

"Jazzy is your cousin," Genie reprimanded. "You should be happy that someone cares for her so much. You should be happy to see her again"

"She overthrew my friends!"

Evie raised an eyebrow, "Technically Aladdin and jasmine handed the kingdom to her and Carlos on a silver platter."

"Yeah, though means of Dark magic she's Evil just like the rest of you-"

"Jordan enough!"

"You overthrew Ben, locked his parents up on the isle, stole our magical items, controlled four AK's, and imprisoned countless royals."

Evies eyes flared blue, and her magic Aura pulsed around her, "yes we overthrew Ben, but the moment Ryder was free he handed over

his kingdom, each of the royal four was trying to fix our signatures after being on the isle for years and never experiencing magic. We fixed the control, and most of the Royals Especially Adam and Belle, deserved it. The imprisoned innocent children, they stole more magic than we did for no reason, they placed wonderland and neverland under Power vacuums. The four are and were under Mind mangles that made them placed the Ak's under your control-"

"You werent-"

"I wasn't finished!" Evie snapped. Jordan reeled back in fear even Eden and genie were in shock "you wanna take my place because that involved being afraid if I would wake up in the morning or id Aaron got made enough that he would kill me in my sleep, I was afraid that He would drown me if I stood up to him, or hook me, or just stab me. So, when you deal with all that and don't fear denying them then you get to talk."

~~~

Evie made her way bad alone, Jordans parents had decided she was grounded and bound to her lamp for the next week. "Ryder." She knocked on the door. Before she could even knock three times, Uma Came out, not ready for the door to open. She accidentally knocked on the girl's forehead.

"Sorry Uma."

"It's fine. Ryder is sleeping." she said, rubbing her now bruising temple, and closing the door behind her. "What happened?"

"Jordans took me to her parents, the Scarab is safe to use inside her head."

Uma's face lit up, "that's great."

"It's just a lot."

It fell again. "What's wrong."

"I should get Jay and Gil." She walked off with Uma on her tail
~~~

"Jay?"

She nodded, "Jay's Jafar's son, Jafar used Genie's magic to turn himself into a genie."

"Thus, making Jay possess the same power that blessed Jazzy."

"Meaning he can do magic in her head." Evie finished with a smile. They got to the kitchen where now Jay was stress eating and Aaron was slumped over regretting life."

Lonnie was giggling, "I told you a gummy worm a Sunday sounded like a bad idea," he just groaned and put his face in his hat.

Evie slapped her forehead, getting the attention of the three, "My amazing team everybody." Uma Suppress a laugh, "Where is Gil?"

"Agraba" Jay said, swallowing a marshmallow.

"Call him, you, me, and him have a matter to discuss."

When Gil finally got there, he was clearly in a bad mood, "What's your issue?" Jay asked with his feet kicked up on a desk in the library.

"Well Jazzy started scratching and screaming."

"Okay but you knew that would happen and you look kinda surprised.

His fist clenched, "I'm surprised because she kicked me in the face and held on to Carlos Like hell was freezing over."

"Are you Jealous?" Evie smirked.

"No."

"You totally are," Jay laughed. "Dude chill she's tied to him remember; we all are tied to our members of the Royal four."

Gil was still not okay, "So? Ryder was hanging off of Uma now Mal."

Evie looked up from her clipboard, "I'm pretty sure Carlos and Jazzy are Platonic soulmates. If not it's some Voodoo, she put between the two of them. That's not important," He looked at her like she was crazy. "Jazzy's mind is more organized and trickier than the boys. There are four sections to fight though before we can get to Jazzy, and we'll likely have to fight back before we can leave. It involves seeing Jazzy's twisted imagination, her family Hall, her dreamscape and then her actual thoughtscape as the cave of wonders."

"Am I the only one afraid of Jazzy, Imagination?" Uma asked.

"Ditto?"

"Me too."

Evie shook her head and looked back to the blue clipboard with her signature crown on it, A gift from Chad who was too afraid to leave Ryder's castle. "Jay, you magic works in there so you're coming with us." His eyes widened and fear shook him to his core, Jazzy scared him almost as much as Ella. "We can't fail. We don't have much time."

Looks like Jazzy's mind is gonna be trip and a half
It's not called the wheel of Trauma for nothing
The writing gods are smiling down upon me as I will unleash hell on your mental states like a good writer
As Always Did you like the picture?
Any predictions?
What are you most excited for?
Most afraid of?
What's the most relatable line?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty-five

[image]

DarkHearts: *"Jay you magic works in there so you're coming with us." His eyes widened and fear shook him to his core, Jazzy scared him almost as much as Ella. "We can't fail. We don't have much time."*

~~~Now~~~

As Night fell upon Agraba Carlos waited for hours for his queen to fall asleep, she had been doing rituals and practicing spells all day and he was hoping she wouldn't go all night.

Around one thirty AM she left her room and made her way to Carlos' where he was on his laptop in bed reading about how to care for birds.

Jazzy came up behind him running her hands over his shoulders into a hug from behind, "Hey."

He looks up and notices that the mind mangle is still affecting her, so he wasn't too hype to see her, "Hello." He scrolls through another article not paying her much attention.

She kisses his temple, "I got you something." He looks at her through the corner of his eye and sees her tapping her leg. "I know you're still mad at me for Juniper, and I can't bring her back, but I did get Stella and Luna's father." A big white wolf as opposed to Juniper who was black and gray. "There's also connections to the rest of the litter. If you want them, just blow this whistle." She placed it in front of him.

She made a show of moving his laptop and sitting on his lap just like she always did and gave him a kiss on the lips as if trying to reign him back in. He knew the tactic; it was made for a little boy who knew no love. A little boy so entranced and intoxicated by the idea of love and companionship that he took all he could get.
~~~

Carlos wasn't that little boy anymore he wouldn't be her pawn, but she couldn't know that. Not yet, so he played along, he placed one hand on her waist pulling her closer and the other on the back of her neck. Gil was going to kill him if he saw this. The boy would never admit it to anyone, but he felt the most like himself in that moment, like he had grown into himself. He was playing her he was moving the pieces on the board as she sat idly by unaware.

For once in his life Carlos felt like the superior VK. Like he was the one at the top of the world because right now in this very moment, He wasn't under Jazzy's control, she was under his. He could feel her magic burning under her skin, he could see a million of her crazed thoughts run through her head. She had left herself open allowing Carlos to see and feel everything she was thinking.

She pulled away breathless and surprised, he made a show of smiling and touching her forehead to his. She smiled, interlocking her fingers behind his neck and leaning into his shoulder, closing her eyes and allowing herself to drift off. The last thing she said before the void of beauty that was sleep took her was, "You really are my king." She kissed his neck then was claimed by Hypnos.

Carlos' smile fell as she drifted off, He picked her up to bring her to her bed only to see Gil and Jane in his doorway. Jane had tears streaming down her face like rivers, Gil's fist was clenched and a glare on his face. He had never seen the happy go lucky son of Gaston so angry, "Hey."

Gil stepped forwards but Jane held him back pointing to the sleeping girl in his arms. Carlos walks past them not trying to wake Jazzy. He kicks her door open and kneels down placing her in bed. He moves her hair away from her face, suddenly he's pulled up and whipped around by an angry Gil who pulls him from the room.

"What the heck man gets off of me!" Carlos snapped once they were outside.

Carlos was slammed into the wall, and he could now hear ringing in her ears, "Gil get off of him!" Jane yelled pulling on his jacket, it didn't help that Gil was twice her size and was bigger than Harry in the way of mussel.

"Gil!" he was suddenly ripped back by a sparkly blue Aura. Evie was walking up with Jay on her heels, her hand was outstretched with the same hue over her hand, "What the heck are you doing!?" She snapped at the pirate.

Jay Pulled Carlos up fishing his jacket, "You, okay?" He nodded.

Gill pulled his jacket and cracked his neck, "nothing everything's fine."

"You just slammed Carlos into a wall, Not only is that now what we need right now, but he's like half your size."

"Evie it's fine, I can take care of myself." He said with a glare at Gil, for once he looked like the King Jazzy made him, "I'm gonna go to my room tell Jane what you need."

Jane was given the same spiel Doug went through and what to do. As Jay was ripped from his body, he stumbled grabbing his head, "I hate that."

"So did Lonnie." Evie giggled, her face steeled again as they walked through the threshold of Jazzy's room and placed a hand on her head, "Ready to see Jazzy's imagination."

"Nope." Jay tenses as Gil placed his hand next to Evie's. They were pulled in and landed on the steps of the Palace.

"Nowhere to go but forward." Gil Quipped looking back at the dark Abyss behind them. They pushed the doors open and it was surprisingly quiet. "Maybe we can make it through without waking up anything."

They tiptoed their way through the dark halls stepping over animals that looked like they were pulled or Hades' domain.

Evie fell Hyperventilating as spells that one could only dream of, or rather have nightmares of filled her head. Shadows of people that could never exist pulled Gil down, one touched his forehead and split into two different entities. one that looked like him and one that looked like Jazzy.

"Gil back the hell aways from me" the Jazzy look alike bared her teeth.

"Jazzy it's just me, remember me"

"I remember I just don't care"

The fake Gil looked like his heart shattered, "I don't understand."

Jazzy groaned "I knew you were dumb but are you really that stupid? I don't love you and I never did I never even cared about you stupid little warf rat!" She stepped closer with every word standing at eye level with him. She then turned to the real Gil got on her knees and leaned in close to his ear, "Your fate is sealed." She said in Jazzy's melodic voice before laughing loudly waking up the animals.

Jay, who was trying to get Evie up, was thrown against the wall by something that looked like a mix of a chimaera and a spider. One of its spider-like legs that was attached to its back tried to stab Jay through the head only for him to move his head at the last second and it went straight through the wall. He was dropped as the wall crumbled, the snake that was a chimaera's tail bit him slowly injecting its poison. Until it was batted away.

A blond with bright blue eyes clutching chains that were shacked around her wrist had been the one to do so. She eyes him, Evie and Gil she cursed in a long-forgotten language under her breath. She saw a shadow trying to rip out Evie's eyes and ran towards her, "With all my Marrow send this shadow back to its eternal Meadow." her hand glowed blue the same blue as Jazzy's original magic, and blasted the Shadow to oblivion, she hauled Evie up and saw Jay still laying on the floor, "Help him!" she snapped

Gil was still pinned to the floor with an image of Jazzy over him holding her favorite dagger, one of her other monstrosities, a huge bat with an owl face and moose horns sat at her side as she pets its feathers, "Bring me his tongue my sweet," she whispered to it.

Jay remembered that Genies didn't have to say a spell, so he tried his luck and snapped the monster disintegrated on the spot, "No!"

The Jazzy look alike Spun around to him she looked back to whoever the girl was, and she was encasing words in a blue orb as they tried to get to Evie who was highly over sensitive to them. The Image of Jazzy pounced on him. He pointed a finger at Gil and freed him, allowing Gil to shake off his shock and knock Jazzy off of him. He used all his pent-up anger and the knowledge that she wasn't real to be able to throw her to the ground and hold her by the neck. Tears fell from her eyes, and she pouted, "I love you."

Jay grabbed a mace off a nearby suit of armor and bashed it into her chest, she screeched, and the image of Jazzy faded until it dissipated into nothing but shadows. "Come on." the blond called holding Evie, Jay grabbed her other arm, "Hold her." She told Gil who grabbed Evie and lead them out of the castle catching spells in her blue protection orb.

"Who are you?" Gil asked over the screams coming from below that he didn't want to think about.

"My name is Ariana." she said catching another spell

"Ariana!?" Jay says in shock.

She nodded, "You probably said my name when Foley was trying to get through to you."

The two-boy looked at each other, "Who are you and what do you have to do with us."

"We've been trying to help you; I knew something like this may resurface one day so I struck a deal with Hades and Persephone when I died. I asked to be attached to my magic so whenever my magic found a worthy holder around the same time that Andreana's magic was being used I would be ripped from eternal peace and placed into the conscious. When Jazzy got the mind mangle placed on her I was ripped from Elysium and placed in her consciousness, it took a while with me in here but soon enough this place was filled with horrors whoever placed her under this spell is just as if not more powerful than Andreana.

"I thought they would be weaker so I could save her since she never

shared her work with anybody. When the hall filled with all of those things, I was locked away behind the wall that the chimaera and spider hybrid smashed."

"Do the rest of us have that, like someone locked in our heads?" Jay asked.

"No, it's just me, I was the first to die and the only one who could strike a deal, it cost me centuries playing with Melinoe but in the end I hope I can make it worth it. Otherwise, I left Lowell in his century old mourning behind for nothing."

That made Gil perks up, "Lowell who is that exactly i know he's Andreana's boyfriend but beyond that nothing."

"Lowell is my platonic soulmate, Just Like Carlos is to Jazzy our magic will always be connected so it will always choose people like us, that's why they're so close. Andreana didn't like it especially after she found out that we shared a kiss when we were younger and trying to figure out what our connection was." Gill winced "It was before they started dating but she wasn't happy and, in the end, it led to my death. I wanted to save Jazzy from a similar fate."

"So, you know who put them under this."

She smacked another creature with her broken chains, "Not a clue she was asleep, but whoever it was is harnessing Andreana herself. They have to be like I said she never shared her work claiming it was too morbid for innocent eyes or two powerful for my 'small brain'" she scoffed, "I'm just as powerful if not more so. And before you ask, I can use my magic because I am the center of Jazzy's power, she uses my magic." She placed her hand on the wall and they burst out into the deserts of Agraba. I can take you to Jazzy but it's gonna be a long trek. She always had an organized and vast mind."

"That was just one room." Evie huffed, feeling weak and useless.

"I think we're gonna need all the help we can get," Gil said.

She nodded tensely and placed a hand above her eyes in an attempt

to block out the sun, "Come one it's this way." she pushed up the sleeves of her white dress and ripped the bottom half off making it go to her knees revealing calf high boots. They made their way through the uneven sand to the family gallery ocean, they thanked Hades that Ariana lived here in the past since neither of them knew the way and didn't want to end up somewhere more messed up then Jazzy's imagination palace.

Yeah, Jazzy mind is gonna be more then on chapter,
This took me hours because I was thinking of what could be in Jazzy's imagination
And suddenly Ariana makes her appearance the first one from Andreana's time with any answers
As Always did you like the picture?
what are you most excited for?
most scared for?
any predictions?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty-six

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *She nodded tensely and placed a hand above her eyes in an attempt to block out the sun, "Come one it's this way." she pushed up the sleeves of her white dress and ripped the bottom half off making it go to her knees revealing calf high boots. They made their way through the uneven sand to the family gallery ocean, they thanked Hades that Ariana lived here in the past since neither of them knew the way and didn't want to end up somewhere more messed up then Jazzy's imagination palace.*

~~~Now~~~

Evie had finally regained her strength and started to walk on her own, following right behind Ariana, Jay behind her and Gil behind him, "Why did you have such a violent reaction to the spells?" Ariana asked her.

"My powers deal with emotion and feeling, those were mental torture spells. My oversensitivity couldn't handle it." she hugged herself, "Sorry I was useless in there."

Ariana gripped her shoulders, "Never be sorry for being overly sensitive, it means you care." She gave her a one arm side hug as they came up on the cliff.

"We have to jump off that." Jay asked fear, lacing his voice.

"Yeah, don't worry the bottom doesn't hurt but you need to put a bubble around your head so you can breathe, you should all be able to do that on your own." After a few attempts it worked. "Come on."

She dived headfirst off the cliff, the three modern heroes looked at each other, Evie still feeling bad for her uselessness in the Imagination Palace was the first to go over, Then Gil being the most comfortable with water then Jay.
~~~

The swim was actually very calm, they passed by pictures of a little Jazzy and her parents, Aladdin and jasmine, and her brother, Aziz. but there weren't very many. They abruptly end and turn into pictures of her and her father, Facilier, and her sisters, Freddie and Celia, there were way more of these then of the others.

And among those pictures were dozens upon dozens of the eight on the isle. "Wow" Jay whispered.

There were a few more of her and Carlos and making funny faces and even rude gestures to other Vk's. and even a few of her and Gil.

This was going to be the calmest part of Jazzy's mind. They managed to swim across the whole gallery and end up back on what was land "She seems to care about you a lot." Ariana said as they walked through the desert again. They could all sense the sadness lacing her tone with and underlying bit of bitterness, even without Evie's power. "I wish Reana loved us that much."

"Reana?"

"Andreana" she said, biting her lip, "There were tons in there but close to none of me or Melany and she loved her too, at least I thought she did."

"Who was Melany,"

Ariana smiled sadly, "She was one of our friends but was more like a sister, we even kind of adopted her. I think at one point she did love us. But love turned to obsession. And obsession turned to resentment and resentment led to death." The three shared a look the same question burning beneath the surface, she must have sensed it, "Andreana wasn't happy with me, and she used me for her experiments, when trying to test later versions of the mind mangle she got the wrong person and in a fit of rage her magic lashed out and it killed me. She didn't care about me though, just the person she got." Tears brimmed in the young woman's eyes, she looked not older than twenty-five she died young. "Here's the emotions vault."

Evie took her half of the Scarab out of her pocket and Jay handed her the other half, "This thing Moves crazy fast." She warned them.

"This is where I have to part."

"I thought you said you would take us to Jazzy." Gil accused.

"I was going to but," She paused, taking a moment to listen, "If she finds out I'm gone. She'll come for you guys the best I can do for you guys is hold her off so you can get to Jazzy, you know how to get back and once you're at the Imagination Palace I can help you get through again," She gulped, "I hope."

Before they could ask what, she meant she ran off back into the desert, "Andreana is involved," Was Evie's first thought. "She's really here."

"We have to find her and banish her back to Hades Domain." Gil said.

Jay shook his head, she already escaped once, we need to get rid of her spirit if we want to make sure Andreana's magic is never used again we need to obliterate her spirit and burn her journals. We need to get rid of every trace of her magic or else even the smallest bit can be used for destruction in the future."

They had made a silent agreement as Evie put the two halves of the Scarab together. It flew up and forwards deeper into the dessert, "Quick." They ran after it following it to a dune where it separated and landed, creating eyes. Slowly but surely the tiger head that was the cave of wonders sprang up.

"Who dares disturb my slumber!?" Its loud booming voice basically announced pointing a big glowing sign at the three.

Jay was the one to step forward, "We are friends of Jazzy, we've come to help save her."

"Beware 'friends' of Jazzy" all of them were a little offended by how he said friends. "Only those with pure selfless intentions may enter."

"We want none of what lies within only to save and talk to Jazzy." Evie announced.

"Very well touch nothing but what you seek."

The three stepped in cautiously, Unlike the Cave in the real world this one was an organized mess of files, photos and copies of relics from Jazzy's life. Most of it were thoughts that were shoved to the back of one's mind, things that were rather left for another day. Some of them were even imaginary friends that were supposed to be in the imagination palace. "Do you think one of these might help us?" Gil asked as he kneeled down next to a cub tiger.

"Maybe" Evie said as she looked at a picture of Jazzy and A tiger cub labeled 'me and rish' in crayon. "Rish?" She looked back to Gil who was trying to wake up the cub without touching it. "Gil That's not imaginary!" she yelled, pulling him back just as the cub pounced. "That's an after image," she huffed.

"That's right Jazzy said she had a cub as a kid." Jay said, stepping away from a collection of Doll eyes. The cub rubbed up against his legs and circled his ankles. "This must be all she remembers. I wonder what happened to him." The cub was just as expressive as Abu and mimed getting blasted and falling on his back.

Gil was the one to answer as he kneeled next to the cub again, "Someone hurt you?" he nodded.

"Fairy godmother." Evie whispered to herself.

Rish ran up to her legs and nudged her in a way of saying, 'what she said.'

"That woman I'm gonna-"

"Jay!" he looked to his 'sister', "She was already taken care of." She knelt down next to Rish. "Do you know where Jazzy is?" He jumped up and ran deeper into the cave and they rushed after him.

They were led to an opening where originally the lamp had laid but now at the top of the staircase of rock was a brilliant gold hourglass, they could see a person struggling inside as she pulled herself above the sand and banged on the glass. "Jazzy!" Gil yelled running up to the hourglass Jay and Evie on his heels.

"Gil!" her muffled voice yelled. She pushed sand out of her eyes and

saw him, "Gil!" She placed her hand on the glass and banged on it harder.

"Jazzy back up!" Jay said loud enough so she could hear. She crawled away from the end Jay was at and he placed a glowing orange hand on the glass. It shattered, Jazzy blocking her face from the shards that burst inward.

She came tumbling out coughing up sand. She pulled herself up trying to stand only to collapse forward Gil catching her, she panted leaning her head on his shoulder. "I've been stuck in this stupid hourglass for the last 12 years I can feel myself dying" she said though pants feeling her pulse. "I can't imagine how Ella feels." a purple hue overtakes her figure and she lurched forward screaming. They could do nothing but watch and wait till it was over.

"What the heck was that?" Gil asked.

"The curse punishes me; she likes to hurt me even if she's not here." She sits up and seems to just realize she is leaning on Gil. She glares at him and shoves him trying to stand again only to fall into Evie. "If I had the strength to push you harder I would, what is wrong with you!"

"Wha-"

"Carlos, you keep yelling at and hitting Carlos." she crossed her arms and looked away from him.

Evie rolls her eyes, normally she would take the time to fix this, but she can't right now this is way more important than a romantic quarrel. She nodded to Jay who stopped Gil from moving forward, "Jazzy we need to know what you need so we can bring you back."

She turned to Evie and nodded, "It's a bit morbid. I need my father's cane, one of my dolls, preferably the beast one, I put a lot of magic into that one and um." she bit her lip, "I need seven drops of blood from Carlos." Jay gave her a look like she was crazy. "I weaved our magic together so he could bring me back, not only that, but Ariana and Lowell's magic is connected."

"You know about that?" Gil asked surprised.

She glared at him, "Of course I do, the older you are the more is revealed not that it'll help in the long run because the closer you get the more you forget who you are. Ella is in real danger." Jay's grip on her tightens.

"I didn't know Aladdin had a Cane." Evie said in wonder.

"Aladdin? Why would I mean him, I meant Facilier."

I would have done the rest, but it would have been too long then,
Who did Andreana curse that led to Ariana's death?
What does Jazzy have to say to Gil?
As always, did you like the picture?
what are you most excited for?
Any predictions?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty-Seven

Last time on DarkHearts: *She glared at him, "Of course I do, the older you are the more is revealed not that it'll help in the long run because the closer you get the more you forget who you are. Ella is in real danger." Jay's grip on her tightens.*

"I didn't know Aladdin had a Cane." Evie said in wonder.

"Aladdin? Why would I mean him, I meant Facilier."

~~~Now~~~

"Facilier!" All three said in shock.

Jazzy tilted her head, "yeah why?"

"It's just" Gil started to talk but shit up as she glared at him.

She motioned for Evie to answer her, "Ryder and Aaron asked for stuff involving their families."

She nodded, "That's what I'm doing." She looked at Evie's worried eyes, "Oh you mean Biological," She nodded. "Well Ryder and Aaron probably want to get to know their family, they probably feel robbed and disconnected, I don't. Facilier was a good dad. I got two sisters out of the deal, and he always taught me about where I came from. I know who my family is but I have no real feelings about them, I don't remember if they loved me or not and I wasn't robbed of any type of love. Ryder *was* robbed, and Aaron probably remembered Eric and Ariel even a little bit."

Jay nodded his head taking in the information, "That makes a lot of sense."

"We don't have a lot of time you have to go now."

"What about the Hourglass?"
~~~

"She doesn't come down here often hopefully by the time she comes by again I'll be getting out of here."

Jay and Evie tense but nodded and started making their way out, "Give me one minute I'll be right there," Gil told the two waving them off.

"I have nothing to say to you" she said, turning her back on him.

"You don't have to say anything, you just have to listen." She didn't say anything, so he took that as his cue to keep going, "I sorry, I've always been kind of a bumbling idiot that nobody liked you were the first one that did. I guess I was just, um what's the word."

"Jealous?" she asked, looking over her shoulder slightly.

Gil sighs and leans against the broken hourglass, "yeah I guess so."

Jazzy stares off into space for a moment, Gil thought she wouldn't answer so he started to make his way out of the cave. "I've manipulated a lot of people; I've made deals and I've probably sealed them by kissing half the people on the people on the isle." She turned around fully looking at him with her eyes glowing their natural magic color "But I've never fallen in love with any of them. I trusted you, but you didn't trust me, I get why. I'm in a state of disarray but you knew that Carlos was supposed to be my 'king'. I had to control him, and you still went along and hurt him. You hurt him, you hurt me Gil we're connected. You may as well have slammed me against the wall."

That image flashed in his head, and he grimaced, "I'm sorry," he whispered.

She shook her head, "Just go before I wake up."

Without another word he stepped out of the cave trying to keep his tears at bay. Jay saw him and placed a hand on his shoulder, "Is everything okay." He shook his head but didn't elaborate. Evie and Jay looked at one another and followed Gil out of the cave. Evie thanked the cave, but Jay was suspicious, "Hey cave!" he yelled before it could sink back in the sand. "If you're Jazzy's Though scape

and you're sentient, why did you let her get trapped."

"I am merely an imprint of the real cave; I have no sense of difference. The Jazzy that runs rampant here is a near perfect copy. It's unlike anything ever seen. I could not tell the two apart." and with that the cave sunk down and the Scarab was left lying in the sand in two half.

"This is bigger than we thought." Evie said, grabbing the Scarab out of the sand, "We have to get back now!" The three started back the way they came, making their way as quickly as they could out of the desert. They passed the emotions vault but didn't notice the purple and orange threads sliding out from under the door.

The three covered their heads and made their way back though the family gallery. Gil heard a small scream behind him and saw Jay being strangled by a purple thread, "Evie!" She turned back just as another one, an orange one, wrapped around Gil's neck.

She swam back and dug her heels into the sand trying to pull them off the boy's neck. "This is gonna hurt." she warned, and she swam behind them. She grabbed the treads and her nails sharpened into thin claws. In cutting the thread she also nipped a bit of their necks.

"Is that how you do it. I thought no magic could work in here"

She shook her head, "No and since we're in the actual mind and it be thought up I could do it, a new technique i picked up. I'll tell you later now let's go; Jazzy doesn't want us in here. We have to get out before she wakes up.

The mind was an odd place, they had jumped off a cliff to get in the water last time but came out on flat land and they knew it was the same place because they saw the palace in the distance. "I can't go back there," Evie insisted.

"Eve."

"No, I can't, you don't know what was going on, what I saw."

"Evie," Jay shook her. "It's fine Ariana said she'd lead us back through." she huffed but nodded.

They trekked through the desert one more time and made it to the palace, "Ariana?"

She stumbled out of the shadows looking Ragged, "Come on I have to get you out of here she's gonna wake up!"

She ran them through the maze of creatures batting monsters out of the way with her broken chains. A spider Chimera reared up "there's a clear path to the door, go!"

The three didn't question it and just ran as the spells were already getting to Evie. As soon as they were out the door Ariana laughed, "Good job my pet," her appearance shifted back into Jazzy and all her glory. "Guess you're not that hard to copy." He said to Ariana who was gagged and chained to the wall tugging at her binds trying to get free. "There's no time to waste, we have to wake up to tell Ella."

Evie Heaved, "We need to go home." All Three project themselves out only to hear Screaming. They looked at Carlos who was holding Evie down he had a black eye and had to spit out a mouth full of blood, as Jazzy had kicked him in the face.

They quickly filled back into their bodies Helping Carlos, "Ella!" she shouts.

"She saw you Idiots!" Carlos Snapped. "We can't wait till morning."

Jay Grabbed his coat, "I'll go get the cane."

Evie grabbed hers. "I'll go get Uma. Gil try to get some blood for Carlos. The smaller boy whipped around in question only to get punched in the jaw. "Jane." She peaked her head in, "Find the Beast Voodoo doll."

"One hour." Gil said with no room for argument "At most."

[image]

This one felt a little sloppy

and for some reason the picture wouldn't load up top

As Always
Did you like the picture?
Any predictions?
What are you most excited for?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty-Eight

[image]

~~~Centuries ago~~~

"You What!" Andreana screamed suddenly, the whole dining hall stopped and looked at the royal sorceress. She blushed, embarrassed and sat back down; Vita looked at her with pure confusion written all over her face. She followed the fixed glare she wore and followed it to Ariana, her sister. She quirked an eyebrow but realized Andreana was ignoring her. She turned back to her food and the meal started up again. Lowell was next to her, so he tried to grab her hand in an effort to comfort whatever she had seen or heard, her glare hardened, and she snatched it back. Ariana was sinking in her seat wishing that the floor would swallow her before her sister got to her.

To understand we need to travel further back in the day. Andreana was sitting in her room writing in her spell books, she was trying to think about the uses for a new spell she made up. "Reana" Ariana smiled bounding in. she would be staying at the castle, from now on as Andreana's Lady-in-waiting appointed by Vita of course.

"Hey Ari." she drawled as her quill scratched the paper, Ariana looked over her shoulder, Her Twin huffed placing the quill in an empty inkwell. "What have a told you about reading my spell book over my shoulder." She tapped her nose, "some of the spells are too dark for you."

"Well, this one wasn't since you didn't snap it closed. Can I ask what it is?"

She tossed the idea around in her head before nodding, "It's Called mind mangle, so far This part is only an extension of a truth serum, one that doesn't wear off and an antidote needs to be administered. Soon enough I'll be able to have full control of a person's thoughts, feelings, actions and secrets. All of this with one spell it's in separate parts right now though."
~~~

"Reana that sounds really dark, like its crossing all kinds of boundaries."

"It's not imagined the good we could do with it; we could turn criminals into proper members of society, stop would be criminals before they happen, reveal traitors' secrets." she seemed so excited, "It's still in the planning stage though so it's only a truth spell so far, mind it I test it on you."

Ariana stepped back her eyes wide, "What are you crazy?"

"Ari i told you it's not a control spell yet I just want to see how the truth part works. Plus, it's not like we have any huge secrets from each other just petty stuff like who ate my cake last night. she giggled her bell like laugh.

Ariana bit her lip she did have big secrets two, but Andreana couldn't know she'd get so mad. "Right?" She faked a smile.

Andreana smiled back and placed a thumb on her four head her eyes glowing black and gold, A section of her hair turned blue just like her magic. Not that Andreana knew that "It's just side effect. now who ate my cake last night,"

"Vita and me we didn't realize it was yours," She answered with a smiled.

The older twin pouted and slapped her arm lightly, "Dang i wanted that, bit hey it works, Mind keeping it on till the dinner tonight I just want to make sure it won't wear off,"

Ariana it her lip and nodded, "Okay."

The rest of the day Andrena sprang up asking odd questions, finally dinner drew and Andreana was getting the Antidote, "I wish this dinner party was tomorrow night especially since I don't want Vita to be sold off think Floy has a chance?"

"No way he was raised on the street," she slapped a hand over her mouth.

"Yea that's probably right. Hmm" She stopped with the vial in hand.

"No more Question, who was your first kiss? You never told me." This was it her grave.

Before she could answer Vita burst in the door smacking the vial out of Andreana's hand breaking it, "Come on you two you both look beautiful we can't be late," And she left again.

"I have more in my storage, but we have to great the guest so try and be as quite as possible till I can get to it."

She nodded but the answer to Andreana's question was still on the tip on her lips. She got though most of the talking just fine, although she was pretty sure the princess of Maldonia hates her now. But half of the way through she couldn't take it anymore she opened a telepathic link and answered, "Lowell it was Lowell about three years ago a month before you to together,

She stood smalling her hand on the table, "You what!" After dinner Andreana was cornered and questioned by Vita and Lowell, "Get away from me." She snapped pushing the Warlock.

"Drea What's going on?"

"You kissed her" She spat pointing at her sister "and neither of you ever told me. Your supposed to be my sister and my betrothed you should have said something!" She slammed her door leaving them in the hall.

Lowell turned and glared at Ariana, "We said we'd never speak o that, it meant nothing."

"Really it meant nothing cause it sure as hell felt like something." They heard a gut-wrenching scream mixed with a sob come from Andreana.

"Maybe we don't do this in front of her room, give her an hour" Vita said. "Come I'll take you down the storage. To get the antidote I told her this would be dangerous. See you in the morning Lowell. I have to figure out how to make my dad and now betrothed forget today ever happened, maybe I can make them forget I was ever a princess and run away with Foley" She walked Ariana away and left Lowell

standing in front of his betrothed's door.

An hour stretched into days with tumbled into weeks, with turned into eight to be exact months and thankfully everything was back to normal, like that truth was never revealed until seven days before the twins eighteenth birthday. Andreana rinsed the scarlet-colored liquid off her hands she opened the door placed herself in the thresh hold and screamed. Vita came bounding down the hall, "What happ-" She trailed off seeing the disheveled broken state of Ariana's room. on the wall written in red was the phrase, *'Some secrets are better left hidden.'*

Andreana clamped a hand over her mouth, "Shes not in here" She sobbed, "Where is she?"

"I don't know but we'll find her." Vita hugged Andreana both falling to their knees.

"But who would have done this."

"I know the princess of Maldonia doesn't like her because of that spell, we can start there."

"This is all my fault" she sobbed rocking back and forth.

Vita pulled her in again, "Don't think like that you had the best interest of the people in mind." Andreana looked over Vita's shoulder still shaking still letting out sobs, but she smirked.

Little did Vita know that Ariana was locked in Andreana's privet study far away from the castle screaming banging on the door with her tied up hands fully aware that her sister threw her in there. Tears and blood staining her cheeks as a cut on her forehead gushed red and her magic dam. "Let me out!" She screamed herself hoarse, "Let me out! This isn't funny Reana, let me out!" she screamed banging on the door until her knuckles were bruised and bloodied, unaware that she would never be out of there. Not anytime soon, and not alive anyway.

I had gotten Lazy and busy all at once. ☞☜
I'm sorry for the lack of chapters I'll do better.

A little more in sight on to what happened between Ariana and Andreana
As Always did you like the picture?
Any predictions?
what are you most excited for?
~DarkVixen

Chapter Forty-nine

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *"She saw you Idiots!" Carlos Snapped. "We can't wait till morning."*

Jay Grabbed his coat, "I'll go get the cane."

Evie grabbed hers. "I'll go get Uma. Gil, try to get some blood for Carlos. The smaller boy whipped around in question only to get punched in the jaw. "Jane." She peaked her head in, "Find the Beast Voodoo doll."

"One hour." Gil said with no room for argument before running out.

~~~Now~~~

Everyone splits off into separate directions. Jane's job was probably the easiest, she just had to rifle through Dolls until she found one that looked like the former king. It was also the most dangerous, if Jazzy got away from Carlos it would be bad. She heard a scream come from Jazzy as she quickly rifled through the dolls hoping not to be on the wrong end of her wrath.

Luna and Stella had bit down on Jazzy's arms as the girl was forcing her voodoo pins into her hands, later she would tell you this was keeping her from lashing out at Carlos. Luna and Stella's Jaws held her in pain and in place. She was so focused on the pain coming from the wolves, Carlos's magic, her hand, and her own head to cast any sort of spell. "I'm sorry Jazzy." Carlos whispered, kneeling down next to her. He brushed a piece of her hair behind her ear.

She screams and turns her light blue gaze on Carlos, Tears stream down her face and she sobs, "I'm scared, I'm so scared." She whispered. "Everything hurts."

He turned to Luna and Stella who were calm, he growled at them, and Luna nodded her head both releasing their jaws and stepping back. Carlos took the broken girl into his arms, pulling her away
~~~

from her work desk and onto the floor with him. He ran his hand through her hair, and started pulling out the pins, "hey look at me," He made her face him. "It's okay, it's okay to be scared we'll get through this. We always do."

Out of the corner of his eyes he saw Jane walking towards the bed, he growled at Luna and Stella. Luna Pounced on her and Stella took the doll and dropped it in Carlos' hand. He simply glazed at Jane, his eyes glowing red. She was so distraught she just gently pushed Luna off and left the room.

She bumped into Gil on the way out who gave her a questioning look before turning back to the room and understanding. He walked in and Carlos growled his eyes burning red, "This is for Jazzy man."

Carlos' glare doesn't subside, but he makes no move to attack Gil as he comes forward with a syringe. Carlos hissed but kept as much quiet as possible as to not disturb Jazzy.

"I'm sorry" Carlos' glare doesn't waver but his eyes dim. "I'm a mess, I've always been the throw away friend. I guess it felt great to have someone pay attention to me and when that felt threatened,"

"You lashed out at the one taking it, yeah I get it if it wasn't for the prophecy i would feel like a throw away friend as well. I have no romantic feelings for Jazzy, Gil. I'm playing the same game she is. I don't want to step on your territory. That sounds wrong, Jazzy's not territory but you know what I mean."

"Yeah, I get it. I'm still sorry."

"I forgive you, but I can't say Jazzy will." They both look down at the unconscious girl in his lap.

~~~

Jay on the other hand felt like he was very much in trouble as he sat in front of his old school principal and in between his two daughters. Freddie had a voodoo doll in hand that looked very much like him, and Celia was flicking her tarot cards between her hands, "Run through that again." Facilier demand his glare burned
~~~

through his skin.

"Jazzy is in danger, if we don't help her there's no telling what could happen, she's under a mind mangle from an old Sorceress named Andreana, No one who's ever had the spell on them has lived past 27. It becomes permanent after the victim is 18 and the only way to break the spell is to use the magic of special and meaningful items. One of Jazzy's is your cane, she considers this her family more than anyone else."

"So, if dad doesn't help, we're sentencing Jazzy to death?" Freddie asked. He was kind of disturbed at how much she looked like Uma; he was going to have to ask her if she knew her father.

He nodded; the two sisters gained a look of Panic. They weren't as close as the Hook siblings, but they were still sisters. Jazzy was their older sister, she had cared for them and loved them as such. She had held her hand when she was learning how to tell the future. She had helped Freddie make her first voodoo doll. She helped their father around the house and even made sure all three of them ate even if it meant she lied and didn't for a few days.

Jazzy was the best deal maker and one of the best thieves on the isle, she returned with small riches for them and had made the Facilier family respectable after the horrid way their father fell from glory. Jazzy was a Facilier against all odds. "Daddy." Celia said, glancing at him.

"She's, our sister." Freddie added. "She did everything for us, she helped us. She, She-"

"Girls" He spoke calmly and softly, "She's my daughter as much as she is your sister." He smiled, laugh lines near his eyes crinkled, Lines that not many villains had. "I have no intention of lettering her fall victim to this curse.' He handed Jay his staff, "please make sure she is taken care of."

Jay smiled back at him, "You can do that yourself, she said you're still her family, she's not disowning you she just getting control back."

The three brightened and nodded at Jay as he left their place on the outskirts of Agraba.

~~~

Evie climbed through the window of Uma's room and rushed to the light switch. When she turned on the light she was met with Ryder on his feet, his fist a swirl of gold and blue. And Uma on her knees on the bed, her necklace and hands glowing blue and white. "What's going on here?" Evie asked not knowing if she should smirk or be disgusted.

"We *were* watching a movie," Uma snapped. "You know we have a door right."

"It's four am."

"And?" Ryder asked, flopping back on the bed. Uma laid back her leg draping over his, head on his chest

She shook her head and walked over to the bed and pulled Uma off leading to a small squeak. "Jazzy's having a breakdown, she saw, we need to fix her now." Uma's eyes widen and she runs to her closet. "Forget actual clothes, just grab your boots and come on both of you."

Mal walks in rubbing her eyes, "What's happening?"

"We have to fix Jazzy now." Uma said, hopping up and down as she put on her boot. Ryder had already gotten his own and grabbed her trident off the wall.

"We might need you too." Evie told her so she stumbled out of the room to grab her boots and her staff.

~~~

Jay got out of his car seeing Evie, Mal, Uma, and Ryder, rushing up staff and trident in hand,

No words were spoken as they ran to her room, but there was no more screaming. Carlos, Gil and Jazzy were all on the floor Jazzy

with bleeding arms that Carlos was trying his best to fix, but he was no healer. Uma grabbed the cane away from Jay and took the vile and doll from Gil and Carlos. "Mal help me."

She gained a panicked looked, "I don't know how."

"It's fine I'll teach you."

And just like that Mal and Una started pulling out the magic, Jazzy's eyes snapped open, and she screamed, she sat up quickly. Mal turned and saw her eyes widened as she grabbed her staff and pointed it at Jazzy. It wasn't strong enough to keep her down, but it was to keep her from killing them. Uma pulled the magic into the syringe and grabbed her trident flatting Jazzy to the floor. "Carlos!"

He gets the message and grabs a pair of scissors off the work desk and clips a lock of her hair, Mal drops her staff and continues the process. When she was done, she tossed it to Carlos who had trouble getting to her without getting punched, kicked and scratched. Gil grabs her arms and Ryder her legs both getting hit quite a few times in the process.

Carlos injected her and she fell limp, Carlos Ryder and Gil all fell back looking worse for wear but not as bad as Jazzy. They were starting to realize how intense this was all getting. "If Jazzy was this bad, how bad is Ella gonna be?" Ryde asked, rubbing a hand over his eyes.

Jazzy is free!! Ella is next.

As Always, did you like the picture?

Any Predictions?

Anything in particular your excited for?

~DarkVixen

Chapter Fifty

[image] [image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *Carlos injected her, and she fell limp, Carlos Ryder and Gil all fell back looking worse for wear but not as bad as Jazzy. They were starting to realize how intense this was all getting. "If Jazzy was this bad, how bad is Ella gonna be?" Ryde asked, rubbing a hand over his eyes.*

~~~Now~~~

They had no time to waste waiting for Jazzy to wake up. They had a little more than two weeks before Ella's birthday which was thankfully a good cover for being secretive. If the boys are any indication, she won't decapitate them for not actually planning anything and trying to free her instead.

Doug had decided to read Andreana's journal a little more and discovered that her story was one of a girls who had everything but one little mistake drove her to madness and it was actually quite depressing. He called the others to discuss what he found hoping it could maybe help with freeing Ella. "Okay so I went deeper into Andreana's journal which is actually very depressing. Basically, She was part of a group of settlers that first came to the four kingdoms and did their best to make sure they wouldn't be disturbing local tribes on the continent, at least the people of three of the kingdoms did." Ben placed his head in his hands and bit down on his palm to keep from screaming. "Andreana would later become part of the selected eight, later twelve. Who spread out over the four kingdoms but came together regularly on how to protect them." the pieces were falling into place for them but not quickly enough?

"She lashed out at her sister trying to keep her away from someone she loved she used her sister as a lab rat after that and when she was trying to curse her sister she found that someone had found Ariana and tried to release her, she had the spell sitting in her hand and refused to dissipate it sparked a fight and she shot her hands out in a shooing motion in her lack of control she shot the spell at
~~~

him making him the first victim of the completed mind mangle. Vita who was the princess also tried to get through to her and was actually the most successful, she apparently cornered Andreana and made her question a lot, but Andreana was also one of the first people to find and understand the powers of the moon drop without connecting to it and trapped Vita in a cage. Her story ends with her summoning spirits to absorb their power so she could have complete and total control of the elements. She realized that she had gone too far, she wanted to turn back time and set everything right. The last section is in different handwriting. It was Vita claiming that the power overwhelmed and destroyed Andreana, and she was so full of darkness that the spirits used a spell to cast her soul and power into the dark dimension but she fears one day she'll return and carry out her plan, so she left the spell that the spirits used."

Evie was the first to speak, "That's tragic."

Ben was next and he looked like he was in a deep though, "So Andreana had no care for her sister meaning since Ella is the farthest gone nothing Ryder does would help."

He looked terrified at the prospect of being useless for his sister. Uma gripped his hand before speaking, "It also means that the select eight, or eleven I guess now, since Andreana's power was never meant to leave the dark dimension, have happened before, and represent each of us here with magic."

"Here let me see that," Gil asks for the book. "Ariana was in Jazzy making that obvious, Andreana is MIA, Vita means life meaning Ella based on her healing abilities, Carlos called me Simon which must mean his powers connected the dots there."

Mal looked over her shoulder still holding Ben's hand, "he also called Uma Ophelia, Jay called me Kessem, Harry, fix, and Aaron Kai, and didn't Gil say Jazzy called Carlos Lowell. Then whose Ryder and Evie?"

Doug spoke up again, "Evie is Fia They both had the same power. Making Melany Ryder. Melany and Andreana were like sisters but she was the second person Andreana killed after Ariana so mixing

Ryder's magic with Ella's corrupted magic is probably not the best course of action if we all want to make it out alive." Ryder slouched and ran a hand through his hair, "Vita and This person were the only one able to get through to Andreana so they should go but how can we do that if we don't even know who they could be."

Ryder perked up, "I know."

~~~

Mal shadow traveled back into the room ten minutes later with Hades who looked very annoyed, "What do you kids want? I was really busy."

Mal slowly looked up with a glare, "Yeah busy with my step-mother." She pulled a pink rose out of her hair.

"We need to speak with Vita, the first princess of Corona."

"Vita, Vita, Vita." he tapped his chin trying to remember the name, "Oh yea I know where she is." He went over to a mirror like surface in the library and murmured and incantation under his breath. The image of a beautiful blond woman with Rosey cheeks, blood red lips and bright golden eyes came up. She was in a golden princess dress with a long sleeve and a glass of red wine in hand. She was sitting on a beach barefoot and she laughed as she clinked the glass with the man across from her. He was in a white polo shirt and black slacks with pirate boots on, his long black hair was tied back in a bun, his orange eyes staring at her like she was the earth, heaven, and all of his wildest dreams wrapped into one. "Not disturbing anything am I?" Hades asked politely.

She looked to the side and smiled, "Oh Hades Hello. To what I owe the pleasure?"

"These children want to speak with you in the terms of." he cleared his throat, the healer's spirit scared him, "Her."

Her smile dropped. She took a deep breath, the man beside her placed a hand on her shoulder and nodded. "Okay."

Jay stepped up, his eyes flared orange beyond his control, making
~~~

both of them smile. "Hello, you majesty's my name is Jay I'm in a relationship with the current queen of Corona, but she's been affected by a mind mangle."

Vita froze before her face hardened and she handed her glass to her companion. "So, she's returned to finish her work and she's using my family line to do so."

"What exactly is her work? We know she wants to turn back time but what does she gain from it." Ryder asked, His eyes flared gold letting the two know that he was of their bloodline.

"She will have control of time, space, Heaven, hell, and all forces of magic. She'll rip apart the fabric of time. Erase the story and start over but this time the pen will be in her hands not mine. She will turn everything back to the night she took Ariana, we will be ripped from eternity and all of you will cease to exist. Andreana is persuasive and manipulative. Whoever she's controlling probably thinks they are getting what they want or need, maybe they think they're getting power. Andreana will never hold up her end of the deal."

This tensed everyone up, Mal stepped forward her green eyes flashing, "We already cured mangles on three of our friends already she's the last and they we can start looking for Andreana."

Her companion Smiled, "Well aren't you a strong bunch of kids." His voice was deep and mysterious. It sounded like he had lived through hell but made it worth it in the end. "I hope you manage this it would be a tragedy to see such strong kids die."

"Foley!" Vita snapped. "Don't scare them."

"It's the harsh reality. Andreana's dangerous she got me from beyond the grave on my thirty first birthday."

Lonnie gasped still holding on to Aaron, they all turned to her as the way cleared Aaron's eyes shone red, "You the midnight death."

He chuckled sadly, "yeah we were all that was left. She wanted to hurt us both one last time."

"She wanted me to feel how she felt so as she was dying, she pointed at Foley and shouted, 'Hear this you Cavalier, let not this man make another year.' we thought the spells was null and void when she died, It wasn't."

They took a moment to process this before continuing, this time it was Uma with Purple eyes. "We were trying to find the best approach since her birthday is soon, we found that she had no love for Ariana and brutally murdered Melany, so her brother." She gestured to Ryder, who had Melany's magic wouldn't work. We deduced it would have to be the person with the magic of who she loved and someone to mirror you, but she is your mirror, and we don't know who Andreana loved who did she curse?"

"Lowell, she loved Lowell, she cursed him by mistake but as it appears the boy with the blue jay on his head having a mental breakdown is Lowell's shadow."

They all looked over to Carlos who was clearly not in a good head space, "I'll be okay when Jazzy's free."

"And you Jay said you were with her meaning you have to be the one to do it, Emotions are what matter here not magic. And it's not like she can talk to herself so it would be someone who knows the good her better than anyone. The more angles the better"

"That would be Audrey and Chad from a kids eye view." Ben said

"And Varian from a parental one," Jay added.

"There you go."

"Thank you, Vita," Mal Bowed.

"Good luck children." and like that the image faded.

There was a moment of silence before Hades asked, "Can I go back to my wife?"

Mal waved him off too shocked to answer, he disappeared in a cloud of black smoke.

Jay clenched his fist, "better start now so we can start the rest tomorrow. We don't have a lot of time." He left the library.

"Don't die!" Harry called after him.

"That's the plan!"

~~~

Ella was in her potions room trying to make a concoction that would show were a different life, *'Why get hung up on what if's.'* the voice in her head asked.

"I just want to know how different it would have been" She answered aloud, pouring in the last ingredient. The gold and black concoction swirled and showed an image of her and Jay at Cotillion, them at balls and dances, weddings and festivities. Her dancing barefoot in the town circle just like her mother. Jay dancing with her. Their wedding and their kids and these images kept replaying over and over. "This is what I would have had?"

'No, it's lying!'

Jay went to knock on the door not even fully sure what he could do for her. That is until he heard her scream, "It can't be I've never done a spell wrong in my life."

He heard her breath heavily; he cracked the door open a bit and saw her crying over a cauldron caressing the side of it.

Ella

♫I caught a glimpse♫
♫Into a parallel world♫
♫One where you still love me♫
♫And we never got hurt, oh♫
♫And you tell me I'm yours♫

Her words were sobbed out and she shook the whole time.

♫What wouldn't I give♫
♫If I could have one more taste♫
~~~

♫Of the dream that I stifled♫
♫But could never erase, oh♫
♫But that's not how it works♫

She placed her hands in the in cauldron

♫What if I'm just trying to recreate♫
♫A masterpiece from memory♫
♫But I won't ever♫
♫Find that magic again♫

Her eyes widened and she dropped her arms further into the cauldron basically elbow deep. Trying to stop the image from fading.

♫What if I was wrong to hope that kind of♫
♫Lightning strike could happen twice♫
♫And forevermore I'll be♫
♫Chasing the storm we had♫

She pulled her hands out shakily and fell to the ground, her arms now colored a swirling black and gold. Her hair was flickering between a dark black and a shining blond. She pulled up a knee letting and elbow rest on it and her hand over her mouth now coating her face in the magic.

♫What we might have been♫
♫Won't do me any good now♫
♫So most of the time I keep♫
♫Two feet on the ground, oh♫
♫And I'm perfectly fine♫

Tears fell down her cheeks

♫But once in a while♫
♫My thoughts get carried away♫
♫To the path that we shared but then♫
♫I chose not to take, oh♫
♫It still lives in my mind♫

She was sobbing now.

♫What if I'm just trying to recreate♫
♫A masterpiece from memory♫
♫But I won't ever♫
♫Find that magic again♫

She kicked the cauldron over letting the contents spill

♫What if I was wrong to hope that kind of♫
♫Lightning strike could happen twice♫
♫And forevermore I'll be♫
♫Chasing the storm we had♫

♫Because I miss you, I miss you♫
♫But I can't talk about it♫
♫I miss you; I miss you♫
♫I'm trying not to think about it♫
♫I miss you; I miss you♫
♫What am I supposed to do about it♫
♫I miss you; I miss you♫

She pulled at her hair and rubbed her hands over her face, almost every part of her colored in dark and purity magic.

♫What if I'm just trying to recreate♫
♫A masterpiece from memory♫
♫But I won't ever♫
♫Find that magic again♫

♫What if I was wrong to hope that kind of♫
♫Lightning strike could happen twice♫
♫And forevermore I'll be♫
♫Chasing the storm we had♫
♫Forevermore I'll be♫
♫Chasing the storm we had♫

"The storm we had" she leaned her face in her hands as her eyes flared gold and her hair did too.

Jay's eyes widened and he pushed the door open "Ella?"

She turned to him, her hair blond and eyes gold, "Jay." Was all she

managed to slip out before her eyes dimmed and her eyes turned black again. She looked around at the room and her arms, "I seem to have been caught up in something."

He gathers her up in his arms letting her sob into his chest and apologizing for what they could have had over and over again. But he couldn't stop thinking about not only the lyrics but that she was so strong that she was trying to free herself. She just needed some help.

We finally met Vita and Foley,
I wouldn't make any assumptions yet
Ellas breaking down and it seems like she's trying to free herself

As Always, did you like the song

Did it fit?

did you like the picture?

Any Predictions?

Anything in particular your excited for?

~DarkVixen

Chapter Fifty-one

[image] [image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *He gathers her up in his arms letting her sob into his chest and apologizing for what they could have had over and over again. But he couldn't stop thinking about not only the lyrics but that she was so strong that she was trying to free herself. She just needed some help.*

~~~Now~~~

Jay thought it was best to start with Varian rather than throwing Chad and Audrey to the wolves immediately. That turned out to be a good idea cause as he walked into Ella's study he was immediately pushed out. "Gimme one moment!" She called through the door.

Ella tied up the pouches of dream dust and looked to the mirror where her image sat, "Are you sure this will work?"

"It always did, darling just keep it on hand, we're gonna need it."

She sighed looking down at the spell in her hand, "I know." She placed them in her messenger bag and walked out of the room removing a mask. "Sorry," she smiled sheepishly to Jay. "I was working on a new spell. Gods forbid it went off while you were in the room."

"What was it for?" he asked with a smile though he was truthfully scared of the answer.

She waved her hand back and forth "Oh you know, the empire."

"What?" He asked weakly with his voice breaking.

She giggled and ran a hand though Jay's hair, "Oh my silly thief, did you really think we were done. Corona is in a time of peace and thriving, I want to bring that as far as i can, we need to share our prosperity."
~~~

Jay tenses but smiles, "You're right." she smiled at him and looked at him like he was her heaven.

"Where are we going?"

"Oh, I'm not going anywhere." She tilted her head in confusion, "as much as I would love to. Your uncle wants to have a day with you."

Her face brightened as she saw Varian out of his workshop and out of his work clothes. "Uncle Varian!" She smiled and basically threw herself at him.

"Hey sunshine." He laughed. He was absolutely terrified of the child in his arms, Jay told him what they were doing. At first, he had frozen Jay to the ground and screamed. Getting Ryder out was understandable, but Ella didn't seem like she was under anything of spell, she had trackbacks, she wasn't slamming her head into a wall trying to get the voices to stop, she wasn't shoving pins into her hand or scratching at her face.

Ella didn't seem evil to Varian, and that was the problem. The young Alchemist had spent so much of his life trying to save his god daughter, he didn't know what she should really be like he couldn't recognize the internal struggle that Jay had seen for years, he hadn't fallen victim to it. He thought his god daughter being home was a blessing from the gods. He had known her as an innocent, perfect child and that was still the image in his head. Never mind that Rapunzel and Eugene hadn't left their rooms, no matter Jay severing the connection in Eugene once, no matter what she had done, Varian couldn't bring himself to see anything else.

That is until Jay harmed himself to show him what Ella was doing. It took Jay stealing Ella's remote and shocking himself with the crown Varian had seen Ella force him to wear for him to believe Jay. Ella was a wonderful actor, but Jay had been playing this game with her long enough to figure out her strategy and unravel what she had created for herself, just like she had done to him so many times.

Now with Varian fully on their side it was less likely for Ella to suspect foul play. "What are we gonna do?" She asked, bouncing on

the balls of her feet.

With Ella out of the palace Jay could head over to Agraba and see what was happening with Jazzy.

~~~

When he got up to Jazzy's room, he was met by a sight he did not expect instead of Gil or the Facilier sisters. Carlos was at her bedside kneeled on the floor holding her gauzed hand in his, forehead leading against her knuckles. His hair was disheveled, his eyes closed tightly, and he mumbled under her breath. "Carlos?"

He looked up and Jay saw that his eyes were bloodshot as well, "Oh" He sniffed, "Hey Jay." he smiled tensely and waved.

The King of Corona walked over to his fellow king and sat on the floor next to him. "I've never seen you so stressed."

He sighed, "I know, and I know I should probably go get some air. But I can't bring it in me to leave her. Every time I do I feel like I can't breathe, my lungs feel clenched, my head pounds. The worst part though is that I know it's not really happening. I know it's all in my head, but I can't do anything about it. even yelled at Jane and Gil"

"Maybe It has to do with the bond you guys share."

"Bond? The magic tied thing?"

Jay sighed, "Jazzy should be the one telling you this, but in order to give you a bit of peace, while we were in there, she told us that in what I can only assume was her last act of conscious magic, she's anchored to you. She trusted you to save her," he told Carlos with a smile.

The boy looked even more broken, "but I didn't. That was all you guys."

"Carlos we wouldn't have gotten in there if you hadn't taken care of her the way you did when she came through. You care about her more than you let on and do it well. Watch when she comes back,
~~~

she's not going to want to leave your side."

~~~

Jazzy sat back in her hourglass looking up hearing the altering words of Carlos. You may be asking why she was back in the hourglass, well. "Once I finish absorbing all the magic that fool put into me, I can finally dispose of both of you." The purple eyed demon giggled like a mad woman. "You are so weak that you ended up back in you prison with little issue."

Jazzy coughed up more sand, "Well sorry if my lungs are filled with sand and glass."

She was ignored "Those boys are idiots; they need to be more careful about who they trust in the mind or Ella's going to rip them to shreds while they're still inside. That is if they get to her before I get to them. The monster sat crossing her ankles and poured a cup of some kind of floral tea. That what it looked like at least, it was the magic The boys had injected in her to make Jazzy stronger.

She felt a rush of magic and looked at her arm to see a coursing stream of red. Carlos' magic. She closed her eyes and placed her hand on the glass, it glowed a dangerous flickering blue and burst through the glass.

The monster whipped around and had her magic at the ready.

(Monster) Jazzy

Strike first
Make it hurt
When everyone assumes the worst
I never have to say I'm sorry

Spiteful
Ruinous
I'm all things you feared I was
Another villain in your story

Her whips out a hand trying to stop the princess only for her to sidestep it like it was no issue
~~~

Jazzy

You think that I'm a spitfire?
You should
Afraid you're on my bad side?
That's good
If I wanted to end you
I could
I could

I'm sinking down
If they only knew how hard it is
For me to climb out
I'm kicking and screaming
But no one can hear me
So what happens now
The shadows are creeping in
I didn't ask for
I didn't ask for this

(Monster) Jazzy

Cold rage
Hides the shame
Of images you can't escape
Scars that live under the surface

It's strange
What we became
When part of you was ripped away
And replaced with something worthless

Jazzy covered her ears and let her eyes light up

Jazzy

You think that I'm a spitfire?
You should
Afraid you're on my bad side?
That's good
If I wanted to end you

I could
I could

I'm sinking down
If they only knew how hard it is
For me to climb out
I'm kicking and screaming
But no one can hear me
So what happens now
The shadows are creeping in
I didn't ask for
I didn't ask for this

Take what's left
Of my fractured heart
Bloodstained 'cause
The pieces are so sharp

She picked up a piece of the glass from the hour glass.

Take what's left
Of my fractured heart
Bloodstained 'cause
The pieces are so sharp

She jammed it into her arm, making her scream blue and purple magic drip from her and on to Jazzy's hands. It sinks down under her skin giving her back some strength.

I'm sinking down
If they only knew how hard it is
For me to climb out
I'm kicking and screaming
But no one can hear me
So what happens now
The shadows are creeping in
I didn't ask for
I didn't ask for this

Never forget
I didn't ask for this

Jazzy's monster counterpart held up a hand and all of the creatures from the imagination palace were at her side in an instant. "You're forgetting something," she smiled. "You're just a parasite, This is really my mind." They all ran past the monster and to Jazzy side, Ariana stood behind her placing her hands on her shoulders. She looked proud and almost speechless. She finally got a handle on her magic. "They obey me. All of this." she gestures to the cave, "Is me." she blinked and was suddenly right in front of the image that had tortured her or twelve years, "You an outside force in here without permission. And frankly I'm very offended so you know what." her hand glowed blue Ariana in a similar state behind her. "I think it's time you felt what twelve years of torment really is, and any image of the mind mangle deserves to be hurt by the person it was tested on."

The next couple chapters will be song heavy as we explore Ella and get her free

There's going to be a song from Tangled the series, and Encanto. Sorry I've been so heavy on Beth Crowley she just has some awesome music.

As Always, did you like the song?

Did it fit?

Did you like the picture?

Any Predictions?

Anything in particular your excited for?

Chapter Fifty-two

[image] [image]

Warning: song heavy chapter filled with mentions of Abuse

Last time on DarkHearts: *"Oh my silly thief, did you really think we were done. Corona is in a time of peace and thriving, I want to bring that as far as i can, we need to share our prosperity."*

Jay tenses but smiles, "You're right." she smiled at him and looked at him like he was her heaven.

"Where are we going?"

"Oh I'm not going anywhere." She tilted her head in confusion, "As much as I would love to. Your uncle wants to have a day with you."

~~~Now~~~

Varian and Ella wandered around the streets of Corona for hours, he would tell her stories of how her mother, father, him, Cas and Lance all defeated Zhan Trir. he took her back to his old workshop to have a drink (Tea) and show her some of his old inventions.

She looked around at his little shrine to her father, "what's up with this, did you have a kiddy crush on dad," she laughed.

Varain rolled his eyes and ruffled her hair, "No, Your dad was my hero, I thought he was the coolest person in the world. Of course as a kid that was when I thought he was Flynnigan Rider. But as I got older and understood more, well he still became my hero for who he was."

Ella's eyes downcasted, "Must be nice." Varain turned to her, "To see dad as more of a hero and less of a quieter." She hiccuped trying to keep her tears at bay.

Varain sighed, "Sunshine, I get where you're coming from, really I
~~~

do, but your dad is not a quitter."

"No you don't!" She shouted standing from her seat, "you don't know where i'm coming from. I lost my whole life and for so long I blamed mom and dad."

"Lost your life?"

"I raised Ryder, Aaron and Jazzy." She said with a rigel appearance, but her eyes, through her eyes he could tell what she was hiding. "I taught them how to read, how to write, I taught them how to steal and how to fight back, It was all me. I took the beatings so they didn't have to, and I stayed up and watched so they could sleep." Varain now had questions, like if the other three knew this.

Varain grasped her hands in his, "You don't have to worry about that, you have your parents to lean on now, you don't have to do it alone."

"I've done it for so long." she whispered just loud enough for him to hear, "I've had to be strong for them my whole life." she had a determined look on her face almost like she was made of unbreakable marble.

Ella

♫I'm the strong one, I'm not nervous♫
♫I'm as tough as the crust of the earth is♫ (she breathed out a shaky breath as all the memories came rushing back)
♫I moved mountains, I moved churches♫
♫And I glow, 'cause I know what my worth is♫

♫I don't ask how hard the work is♫ (she picked up a few concoctions she had made she pulled out a few of her hairs and dropped them in swirling it around a bit)
♫Got a rough, indestructible surface♫
♫Diamonds and platinum, I find 'em, I flatten 'em♫ (She clenched and hand into a fist which glowed black)
♫I take what I'm handed, I break what's demanded, but♫ (She threw the balls on the floor letting smoke fill the room. Multicolored smoke swirled and shifted around them into images of her and the

others as kids.)

♫Under the surface♫
♫I feel berserk as a tightrope walker in a three-ring circus♫ (Varain saw Ella, Ryder, Aaron and Jazzy all huddled in the street under a tattered awning)
♫Under the surface♫
♫Was Hercules ever like, "*Yo, I don't wanna fight Cerberus*"?♫ (the eyes of both The image of her and Ella herself blacked out completely and her lips cured into a smile)
♫Under the surface♫
♫I'm pretty sure I'm worthless if I can't be of service♫ (Varian stood in horror as Ella shielded Ryder from Hans)

♫A flaw or a crack, the straw in the stack♫
♫That breaks the camel's back♫
♫What breaks the camel's back? It's♫
♫Pressure like a drip, drip, drip, that'll never stop, whoa-oh♫
♫Pressure that'll tip, tip, tip 'til you just go pop, whoa-oh-oh-oh♫

♫Give it to your sister, your sister's older♫ (her younger self had a hand on Ryder's shoulder)
♫Give her all the heavy things we can't shoulder♫ (Now she was talking to Jazzy and Aaron)
♫Who am I if I can't run with the ball?♫
♫If I fall to♫

♫Pressure like a grip, grip, grip, and it won't let go, whoa-oh♫
♫Pressure like a tick, tick, tick 'til it's ready to blow, whoa-oh-oh-oh♫
♫Give it to your sister, your sister's stronger♫ (She had Carlos and Evie's hands in hers)
♫See if she can hang on a little longer♫ (the younger Ella, gripped her head as shadows creeped around her, she threw out her hands making them fall back)
♫Who am I if I can't carry it all?♫
♫If I falter♫

♫Under the surface♫
♫I hide my nerves and it worsens, I worry somethin' is gonna hurt us♫ (the older who stood next to her god father looked terrified and

a swirl of gold and black overtook her eyes)
♫Under the surface♫
♫The ship doesn't swerve, has it heard how big the iceberg is?♫
(The younger Ella stood up on a chair to get in the face of someone much bigger than her with Jay Aaron and Mal at her sides)
♫Under the surface♫
♫I think about my purpose, can I somehow preserve this?♫ (She grinned her crown so tight Varian worried she'd cut her hands)

♫Line up the dominoes, a light wind blows♫
♫You try to stop it topplin', but on and on it goes♫ (The younger Ella was handed one of Evie's crowns which caused her to shake angrily as they overlooked Auradon)

♫But wait, if I could shake, the crushing weight♫ (The images were much happier now with her, Aaron and Mal laughing on Mals Bed)
♫Of expectations, would that free some room up for joy♫ (now her Evie and Jazzy making dolls Normal ones)
♫Or relaxation, or simple pleasure?♫ (Lastly her and Jay at the sinister society club drinking sodas and laughing. She smiled up a him as he kissed her forehead)
♫Instead, we measure this growing pressure♫ (pressure)
♫Keeps growing (pressure), keep going (pressure), 'cause all we know is♫

♫Pressure like a drip, drip, drip that'll never stop, whoa-oh♫ (Ella no older than eleven sat hunched over her desk with a crying Ryder in her lap looking for a way off the isle)
♫Pressure that'll tip, tip, tip 'til you just go pop, whoa-oh-oh-oh♫
♫Give it to your sister, it doesn't hurt and♫ (Ella was smacked by Gothel)
♫See if she can handle every family burden♫ (Now she was hit by Hook as he yelled at him for Aaron's sake)
♫Watch as she buckles and bends but never breaks♫ (seven-year-old Ella was kneeled on the floor, a black eye, bruised cheek and a busted lip but a determined look on her face)
♫No mistakes, just♫

♫Pressure like a grip, grip, grip, and it won't let go, whoa-oh♫ (It was like a switch flipped asn suddenly images rushed past Varian of her being as bad as can possibly be)

♫Pressure like a tick, tick, tick 'til it's ready to blow, whoa-oh-oh-oh♫ (She ran forward staking the place of the illusion covering the rest of the eight)
♫Give it to your sister and never wonder♫ (She held out her arms as spell blood after spell book fell in her arms)
♫If the same pressure would've pulled you under♫ (she looks up at Varian with pleading eyes. They shimmered her natural gold but were dying down to black)

♫Who am I if I don't have what it takes?♫
♫No cracks, no breaks♫ (She drop the book and held up her arms as walls came crashing around her, she held them up to the bed if her abilities doing her best to shield her friends)
♫No mistakes!♫
♫No pressure!♫ (She flinched jerking her head to the sides four times before the glow died)

Finally, the images subsided, and Ella dropped her outstretched hands, "I can't rely on anyone else" she shakes her head. "Especially not parents."

Sorry I haven't Posted much I've been dealing with school troubles (Guess who has to take summer classes to get her associates degree)
I'm officially headed to campus on Monday so i have a lot that needs to be done
whenever my schedule allows this will be updated, I'll do my best to push out a chapter at least once a week again.
Can't beileve I've already been working on this for eight months

As Alway, did you like the song?

Did it fit?

Did you like the picture?

Any Predictions?

Anything in particular your excited for?

~DarkVixen

Character Descent: Filler

[image] [image]

Ryder

Ryder is a good boy he listens to his sister
Ryder is a good boy he obeys his parents, but they still got mad
Ryder is a good boy he always got to school on time
Ryder is a good boy her helps out other kids on the isle
Ryder is a good boy he knew how to love with all his heart
Ryder is a good boy he knew how to love Carlos with the heart of a prince not the fury of a villain
Ryder is a good boy he only stole when Carlos or he needed food
Ryder is a good boy he broke up with Carlos nicely and fazed it out
Ryder is a good boy he only yells at Evie when she's being a ditz
Ryder is a good boy he never snaps at Jay
Ryder is a good boy he treats Uma like a Queen
Ryder is a good boy he only snaps at his friends so they could be tough, they'll need it
Ryder is a good boy he only embarrassed girl who didn't know personal space
Ryder is a good boy he only taunted his prisoners because they deserved it
Ryder is a good boy everything he does is to make his sister happy
Ryder is a good boy he made Mal a Queen on Ella's command
Ryder was a good boy, but he Enjoyed scaring those girls
Ryder was a good boy but he like Making people question themselves
Ryder was a good boy, but he revealed in bloodshed
Ryder was a good boy, then a despicable king
Ryder was a good boy, but he tore the crown from a king's head and placed it on his own
Ryder was a good boy, but he knew the price of freedom and was

willing to pay it
Ryder was a bad man he hurt people
Ryder was a bad man he scared kids
Ryder was a bad man he took a kingdom
Ryder was a bad man he stole a crown and a throne
Ryder was a bad man he forced Mal to be with him
Ryder was a bad man he placed people under his control
Ryder was a bad man he let Ella hurt people
Ryder was a bad man he lied to his sisters and brothers
Ryder was a bad man he dragged Uma into his mess
Ryder was a bad man only to himself

Ryder wasn't so bad, not really

[image]

[image]

Aaron

Aaron is a good boy he listens to the oldest just like is parents told him to
Aaron is a good boy he loves his sisters and brother
Aaron is a good boy he always does his homework
Aaron is a good boy he plays with the kids on the isle
Aaron is a good boy he teaches self defense
Aaron is a good boy he understands the power of true love
Aaron is a good boy he wasn't all crazy
Aaron is a good boy his heart was red not black
Aaron is a good boy he had fun with Evie
Aaron is a good boy he always looked out for his crew
Aaron is a good boy he looked out or CJ
Aaron is a good boy he made Evie a Queen
Aaron is a good boy he's a Captain, a leader
Aaron is a good boy he only stole because it's his job as a pirate
Aaron is a good boy he wasn't sadistic
Aaron is a good boy he had bloodlust but never spilt it
Aaron was a good boy then he scared others for fun
Aaron was a good boy then his sword was no longer to pull his look together
Aaron was a good boy then his hook was more than just a symbol of

his father
Aaron was a good boy then he stole a girl away from her family
Aaron was a good boy then he put two people under his thumb
Aaron was a good boy then a mad king
Aaron was a good boy then he went to torture Pan
Aaron was a good boy then his heart turned dark
Aaron was a bad man he hurt families
Aaron was a bad man he sacred fairies
Aaron was a bad man dark fey were happy to see him
Aaron was a bad man he tricked his parents and sister
Aaron was a bad man he worried his siblings
Aaron was a bad man He forced Evie to be his queen
Aaron was a bad man he scared and manipulated Evie
Aaron was a bad man he let Ella control him
Aaron was a bad man he was lying to his sisters
Aaron was a bad man he dragged Lonnie down with him
Aaron was a bad man, but his heart lightened
Aaron was a bad man in his own head

Aaron was never a villain only the victim

[image]

[image]

Jazzy

Jazzy is a good girl she paid attention to Ella and stayed safe
Jazzy is a good girl she loved her sisters and Father
Jazzy is a good girl she did what her teachers said
Jazzy is a good girl her father said so
Jazzy is a good girl she liked to sew dolls
Jazzy is a good girl she learned to love young
Jazzy is a good girl she still moved with the grace of a princess
Jazzy is a good girl she never forgot her princess teachings
Jazzy is a good girl she liked flowers
Jazzy is a good girl she understood that death was permanent
Jazzy is a good girl she looked out for Celia and Freddie
Jazzy is a good girl she made important friends
Jazzy is a good girl she never messed with your mind
Jazzy is a good girl she only hurt people who hurt her family first

Jazzy is a good girl she only scared those who were mean
Jazzy is a good girl she only turned those who wronged her into creatures
Jazzy is a good girl she didn't enjoy the sight or thought of blood
Jazzy is a good girl she looked out for Carlos
Jazzy is a good girl she learned to love Gil
Jazzy is a good girl she got Carlos away from his mom
Jazzy was a good girl then she stopped making normal dolls
Jazzy was a good girl then she became a sorceress
Jazzy was a good girl then her cards really had powers
Jazzy was a good girl then she used her grace to lure people in
Jazzy was a good girl then she had dreams of hurting Curella
Jazzy was a good girl then she messed with Carlos' mind and emotions
Jazzy was a good girl then her flowers were used for hex's
Jazzy was a good girl then she hid her parents and brother away
Jazzy was a good girl then she let Ella hurt her parents and brother
Jazzy was a good girl then she harmed Jane emotionally and placed her under several charms
Jazzy was a good girl then hate became her favorite weapon
Jazzy was a good girl then a crazed queen
Jazzy was a bad woman she hurt a girl for no reason
Jazzy was a bad woman she liked making Jane and Gil jealous
Jazzy was a bad woman she had cursed so many
Jazzy was a bad woman she used forbidden magic
Jazzy was a bad woman she yelled at Carlos
Jazzy was a bad woman she aimed a knife at Audrey
Jazzy was a bad woman she let Ella control her
Jazzy was a bad woman she hurt Gil
Jazzy was a bad woman she made monsters of pure fear and hate in her head
Jazzy was a bad woman her mind was a dangerous palace
Jazzy was a bad woman even with Ariana in her head
Jazzy was a bad woman, and she knew that
Jazzy was a bad woman and that's why she was laid up in bed unconscious and in pain
Jazzy was a bad woman, but her family knew better

Jazzy was a bad woman but only because she was made to be

[image]

[image]

Ella

Ella is a good girl she watches her brothers and sister
Ella is a good girl she goes to school on time and does her homework
Ella is a good girl she keeps Ryder safe
Ella is a good girl she never listened to Gothel and Hans
Ella is a good girl she never lost her princess poise
Ella is a good girl she knows compassion
Ella is a good girl she knows love
Ella is a good girl she could learn from hate
Ella is a good girl she understood her duty
Ella is a good girl she makes dolls for the kids on the isle
Ella is a good girl she played with the isle kids
Ella is a good girl she helps Carlos and Evie
Ella is a good girl she stands up to Maleficent
Ella is a good girl she knows how to love Jay
Ella is a good girl she gave Jay a home
Ella is a good girl she knows how to listen to adults
Ella is a good girl she only steals to make ends needs
Ella is a good girl she only yells to keep others away from her friends
Ella is a good girl she only yells at her friends to get them ready
Ella is a good girl she never beat anyone up unless they deserved it
Ella is a good girl she only imprisoned those who hurt her and her family
Ella is a good girl Everything she did was to protect the eight, her family
Ella was a good girl then she listened to Hans and Gothel
Ella was a good girl then she played mind games with people
Ella was a good girl then she found out how to use her magic on the isle
Ella was a good girl then she sang the song of freedom
Ella was a good girl than she caused harm and ripped families apart
Ella was a good girl than she brought a king and queen to their knees

Ella was a good girl than she sang an incantation meant to kill
Ella was a good girl then a Dark Queen
Ella was a good girl than she knew who placed her siblings under the mind mangle
Ella was a good girl than emotions of pure joy coursed through her at other expense.
Ella was a good girl no one knew this
Ella was a bad woman she loved to see others in pain
Ella was a bad woman she electrocuted Mal
Ella was a bad woman she hurt Jay
Ella was a bad woman generations were afraid if her
Ella was a bad woman she made is so a fey would never see her mom again
Ella was a bad woman she had a centuries old dark sorceress in her head
Ella was a bad woman she drove the love of her life crazy
Ella was a bad woman she made bad things happen
Ella was a bad woman she used dark magic
Ella was a bad woman Gothle was her idol
Ella was a bad woman her love is twisted
Ella was a bad woman her mind was a shattered mess
Ella was a bad woman she had blood on her hands
Ella was a bad woman so much so that a demon might be telling her to calm down
Ella was a bad woman but was she through and through?

Only she knew and she'd never tell

[image]

[image]

Why is this longer than some chapters I have up I got classes on campus tomorrow, which means train rides, good lord wish me luck.
I'll post as much as possible in the coming months

As Alway, did you like the song?

Did it fit?

Did you like the pictures all five?

Any Predictions?

Anything in particular your excited for?

Chapter Fifty-three

[image] [image]

Double (Technically triple) song chapter

Last time on DarkHearts: Varian's tactic of getting Ella to talk about her trauma had worked wonders. Ella was not only trying to pull herself out but realized others were as well. When she got home that night, she was skittish and very much trying to pull herself back together. It helped that she voluntarily talked about a lot more than they expected.

It was time for the next part which involved Audrey and Chad.

~~~Now~~~

Getting Ella to allow Audrey and Chad into the Castle had to be the hardest part of the entire plan. "There's no reason they should even be out of the dungeons."

"Reprogramming Ella. Jazzy did it already."

Ella whipped around and looked her boyfriend in the eye, "Fine, I'll call her and see how far she got with it."

Jay's eyes widened as she walked to her room, "wait!" just as he reached the threshold to her room. She slammed the door on his arm, "Ouch, for spirits sake Ella!" She pulled his arm back out.

"That's your fault!" she yelled from inside slamming the door shut.

She huffed and sat on the bed, her hair bouncing with her, "'who does that little thief think he is!"

"Hey. He's still my boyfriend!"

"He's being annoying just like Foley."
~~~

"Well I'm not Vita and he's not Foley."

There was a chuckle, "You have no idea."

She shook the voice away, She pulled her phone out of her dress pocket and called Jazzy, Voicemail. She glared and tried again, Voicemail. "One more time and I'm going over there," She mumbled.

She called again on the last ring someone picked up. "Hello?" A gravelly voice answered.

"Jazz?"

She cleared her throat, "Hey El," her normal voice was back but she was whispering. "What's up?"

"Why are you whispering? And Jay has been talking about reprogramming with Chad and Audrey, did you do that?"

There was a hum on the other end, "yeah a while ago, Got pretty far. Oh and Carlos is asleep next to me."

"So there's no danger. Glad you're embracing your king more."

"No just Audrey trying to be all giddy and friendly, She hung out with Aaron and Evie first so Eve might have rubbed off on her."

Ella groaned, "Alright fine whatever, bring them."

"Kay see you in a bit."

"Bye" Jazzy clicked off her phone. And looked down at her king, She thought back to what she saw just moments ago and thanked the spirits for Ella calling so she could finally pull herself out. There had been a blinding light that rushed past her vision, She saw images of the other seven. She saw purple magic splatter against her blue dress, almost like blood. She grinned like a madwoman and looked up.

Carlos was fast asleep on the floor, bent over with his head against the soft mattress. He stirred awake as he felt fingers run through his

hair. He rubbed his eyes and looked up to see Jazzy smiling down at him, she looked tired but otherwise just fine. The only indication that she was any different was her hair, It was dark brown again.

It took the boy king a few seconds to realize what was going on, his eyes widened and he sprang to his feet. He sat carefully on the bed. "Jazz?" He reached a hand out to touch her head.

She took his hand in hers and grinned, "It's me Carlos."

"How are you feeling?" He knelt closer, handing her a cup of water from her nightstand.

"Better," She coughed up some purple magic. Carlos handed her a towel from her bedside draw. "Less like I want to overthrow a monarchy."

Her king let out a small Chuckle, "Well it's a little late for that."

"We really messed up haven't we?" Jazzy asked looking down into her cup watching the ice swirl, Gil or Jane must have brought it in for Carlos not long ago.

The boy king bites his lip, "We did, but we also did more than you could ever imagine."

"Did we help?"

"So many." He said moving onto the bed to cradle her into his side. "We unseated Belle and Beast, we helped everyone they imprisoned. We gave compensation to soldiers and paid off their nation's debt."

Before she could answer she saw Gil in the doorway Jane was next to him booking down biting her lip. Both looked as if they wanted to come in but didn't want to intrude, well Jane looked terrified of intruding. She moved away from Carlos and beckoned Them in. "No, it's okay if we're intruding," both gave him a deadpanned look, they knew he was jealous. Jane was too but she wasn't going to slam Jazzy into a wall.

Carlos smirked, "Gil what we have, it's not love. Not romantic love anyway. It's comfort."

Jazzy laced her fingers with his, "Friendship, a love in the most platonic sense possible. That's all."

~~~

Jazzy grumbled as she pulled up to The Corona Castel, "I'm a princess not an escort."

"You're a Queen darling." Gil said from the back where he was cuffing Audrey and Chad's hands to their back.

"Oh yea, Ugh." she hit his head against the steering wheel.

Carlos shook his head, "I still think I should have drove."

She glared at him, "Carlos I'm fine, I'm not one of the boys." Jane Giggled from the back, "My magic is more powerful."

"I resent that comment," Gil said, he reached forward and pulled at her hair making it turn purple. "Let's go."

They pulled Audrey and Chad out of the car. "These shackles are cutting off my circulation."

Chad rolled his eyes, "Were in shackles and free or not were still surrounded by villain kids who own that fact, you really wanna complain right now." her mouth shut with an audible click.

They were brought to the throne room where Ella and Jay sat looking every bit the royalty that they are. Ella wore black dress that fell just above the floor with her crown on the Medallion and three golden rings on her fingers with purple, Blue and red gems on them representing the Ak's.

Jay was in a similar state, three silver ring on his hand in red, Dark blue, and purple representing the Vk's. He was in a suit with an orange shirt and a black tie. His hair was also tied up in a bun, his crown laid like a dangerous weapon above his brow.

"Hello again." Ella sing songed. She gracefully stepped forward and Chad could tell she was barefoot under her dress. She was still her mothers daughter. "Where's the key?"
~~~

Jane dropped the key into her hand, Ella tilted her head, a fire burning behind her eyes. "Why does she have it?"

"I gave it to her," Jazzy said. "Carlos was parking and Gil and I were the only other two strong enough to hold them, Jane is a weak little fairy," she spat.

Ella narrowed her eyes almost as if deciding if she was lying or not, "Be smarter next time."

She nodded her head and curtsied leaving with Carlos, Gil and Jane who also remembered to bow.

Ella unlocked them, "Jay you have paperwork." She reminded him, not looking up.

"Are you sure you'll be fine with them?" he didn't want to leave her alone if she came though.

She whipped around, "Paper. Work." He gulped and nodded, rushing off to do it. Chad looked around with a grin, "What are you smiling at?"

"We used to play here all the time." He said bouncing on his heels.

Audrey laughed as if just remembering something, "We used to play with your parents' jewelry and walk around as if we were them."

Ella gained a dawning look and laughed, Her black hair dimmed just a little, Audrey noticed and her smile widened. "I think I have that ring my mom wanted to propose to my father with." they figured the time with Varian was why she was being co cheery right now.

"Wait really." Chad laughed.

"Yeah, I stole it, I think," she looked confused, "I don't know a lot has been fuzzy lately I think I'm getting sick." she shook it away, "Come on I have it." She beckoned them to follow her. "I wasn't gonna show it to anyone yet cause I have a plane for it.

Audrey smiled, "What is it?"

Ella tilted her head and scrunched up her nose, "I guess I can tell you, As long as you swear not to tell anyone." They nodded.

Ella

♫I was always taught nobody's got it all♫
♫And I never thought I had a shot at all♫
♫But to my surprise, look at how lucky I've been♫

She turned to them walking backwards a grin clear on her face she was excited

♫Woah♫

She ran her had along a wall that had paintings on it, they remembered it as Rapunzel's mural but it seemed that Ella had added to it recently.

♫Freedom to explore, work that I love to do♫
♫Friends that I adore, especially, well, you-know-who♫ (She lingered on a painting she made of Jay)
♫I'm not keeping score♫
♫Still, though, I pretty much win♫

♫Yes, I get to be the girl who has everything♫
♫The world on a golden string♫

♫And somehow, it's mine♫

smiled sadly at a painting of her mother, father and Varian

♫Just look at me, the girl who has everything♫
♫And I can tell everything♫
♫Is gonna be fine♫

She looked back to them and pointed to a different wall

♫Think of all I've done, life's really tested me ♫(she had a done a painting of her getting dropped on the isle, to remember her roots they supposed)
♫Sometimes I have won, sometimes it's bested me♫
♫Things got pretty dark, now, though, the dawn's coming through♫

Ooh

♫Yes, now I'm safe and sound, back with my family♫
♫When I look around, I see how things can be♫
♫Everywhere I turn, there's so much more I can do♫

She leans a hand on a picture of something she deeply wants but never got, Her, Ryder and their parents all holding hands smiling.

♫And I get to be the girl who has everything♫
♫The blessings this world can bring♫
♫All falling in line♫

She leads them to her study and opens the top draw of her desk. She pulls out a small box that has the ring inside.

♫Somehow that's me, the girl who has everything♫
♫Well, practically everything♫
♫I'm sure there's more everything♫
♫For now, I've got everything♫
♫And everything's fine♫

She opened the blue and gold box and shows them the exact ring, it was red with intricate golden designs and a beautiful yellow topaz in the middle, "Jay's birthday is two weeks after mine. That night when we're alone," she trailed off smiling at the ring.

Audrey got to the conclusion before Chad, "you're gonna ask him," she gaped.

"To marry me." She giggles like the madwoman she is and nods caressing the ring.

"Whoa you guys are only gonna be 18 and 19." Chad points out.

"Your mom was 19 when she married you dad." She pointed out, and why wait, we already have everything we need. Yeah there's still more work to be done but," She sighs, "I want him to promise me he'll be there with me. I want to promise him the same thing."

She let out a dreamy sigh

Ella

♫I'm gonna be the girl who has everything♫
♫Soon as he wears this ring♫
♫And swears that he's mine♫

♫True, we don't know what obstacles fate may bring♫
♫But why put off everything♫
♫When we can share everything♫

♫'Cause once he's my everything♫
♫Then everything will be fine♫

They saw her eyes glow gold but her hair was still black she was still fighting, they had to keep going. She hopped up on the desk and swung her legs back and forth. "You must have such a clear vision of your future." Audrey said dreamily as she sat down on a chair that was at the desk.

Chad followed her lead and sat at the other, "We always did as kids, I don't see you going that up especially if you're gonna marry him so soon. You know who you guys are and that's amazing considering how young we are."

Her face fell, she looked in pain and her hands shook. She let out a small grunt but made no other signs that she was breaking though. "Not really." She placed the ring down

Ella

♫I thought I was an outcast♫
♫I thought I stood alone♫
♫A rogue, a thief, a joker♫

♫No place to call my own♫ (she pulled out a box and placed it on the desk)
♫I thought no one could love me♫
♫And how could I have known♫
♫I was wrong♫
♫Oh, so wrong♫

She opened the box and inside were pictures and drawings of her

on the isle, they said things like, 'the new reign' and 'our savior' 'The Queen of light'. And at the bottom pictures of her and Jay

♫Then I thought I found it♫
♫A dream that I could share♫
♫I thought I was so lucky♫
♫It almost wasn't fair♫

She moved her finger in a circle and shot a spell at the mirror

♫I thought I knew my purpose♫
♫I thought that I knew where♫
♫I belong♫
♫But I was wrong♫

It was her when they first came to Auradon, and were having meetings on how to overthrow Beast and Belle

♫Everything I ever thought I knew♫
♫Where I've been♫
♫Where I'm going♫

♫Everything I counted on turned out to be untrue♫
♫Could've guessed♫
♫Should've known♫

"It's always like that"

♫Now I do♫

She didn't look to sure, actually she looked terrified.

♫Everything I've yearned for♫
♫Everything I planned♫
♫All my sweetest memories were castles made of sand♫

♫Now that it's all crumbling♫
♫Help me understand♫
♫If none of it was really me then who am I supposed to be?♫

She placed a hand on the image of her in black and red, Gothel's colors grinning like a crazy person as she destroyed serpent prep

with Jay and Mal

♫And everything I ever thought I knew♫
♫Every hope♫
♫Every feeling♫

♫Love and trust and happiness♫
♫They're done, they're gone, they're through♫

She glared at the image of her yelling at Jay. Then it switched to one she hated more, Gothel and Hans telling her love was useless in the long run.

♫And what's left♫
♫Me alone♫
♫Once again♫
♫Should've known♫

"I'm sure it's a Fitzherbert thing."

♫Now I do♫

♫I guess my life there meant nothing♫
♫I guess it was a sham♫
♫I guess I'm someone else now♫
♫I wonder who I am♫

Her eyes were still glowing as her hair dimmed "Villains don't usually get their happily ever after. But maybe I can change that, maybe we're not villains. It's all gonna change once he puts on this ring-" Her face fell, she shook and dropped the ring. She let out an ear piercing shrike as she fell over. Jay heard it from his study on the other side of the castle. He jumped up and raced off to find her

She opened her mouth in silent pain, she started coughing and what looked like shadows poured out of her. Her eyes were a swirl of gold and black. She glared at Audrey and Chad, "Look what you've do-" She cut herself off as she started coughing up more shadows, her hand glowed black as she placed it over her mouth to keep what was left in, she was heaving and scratching at her face. Audrey knelt next to her and Chad tried to keep her from banging

her head against the floor which she already did twice.

Her other had glowed gold and it shot up and ripped the black glowing hand from her mouth. She threw herself back into a kneeling position. Ella sat crouched on the ground she was hunched over as the last of the shadows poured out of her. She breathed heavily as if she had been underwater for a long time, she looked up at the two with her golden eyes, she looked broken and beaten. She wiped her mouth almost like she had just won a fight. Her hair was fully blond again, her cheeks were rosy red although she was pale, and her eyes were glowing gold. She was shaking and struggling to keep herself up right, She looked surprisingly calm considering what happened "Where's Jay?" her voice was softer than ever.

https://youtu.be/XuUyEPuTlJc

Second part of the song

https://youtu.be/7_mx-Biv0Cc

Other song

This chapter wasn't gonna be so long, but I couldn't decide between a Rapunzel song or a Eugene song. I have a lot of homework and I should be doing that but I'm not. Eh I'll do it tomorrow.

As Always
Did you like the song(s)?
Did it fit?
Did you like the picture?
Any predictions?
Anything in particular you're excited for?

~DarkVixen

Chapter Fifty-four

[image]

Last time on Darkhearts: Her other had glowed gold and it shot up and ripped the black glowing hand from her mouth. She threw herself back into a kneeling position. Ella sat crouched on the ground she was hunched over as the last of the shadows poured out of her. She breathed heavily as if she had been underwater for a long time, she looked up at the two with her golden eyes, she looked broken and beaten. She wiped her mouth almost like she had just won a fight. Her hair was fully blond again, her cheeks were rosy, red although she was pale, and her eyes were glowing gold. She was shaking and struggling to keep herself up right, she looked surprisingly calm considering what happened "Where's Jay?" her voice was softer than ever.

~~~Now~~~

She grunted in pain as her eyes shined gold, unlike the others whose eyes glowed the color of their corrupted magic, she heard rapid footsteps that were probably impossible for the former prince and Princess to hear but were like thunder in her ears. "Jay!" She screamed at the top of her lungs making Chad and Audrey cover their mouths.

Almost as if he was summoned, Jay burst through her office doors. The sight wasn't pretty to say the least with Ella kneeled on the ground covered in shadows and blood falling down her neck from where she hit her head. But her head was blond and her eyes were gold. "Hey nightlight," He said softly.

She gave him a strained smile, "My thief." she grunted again and fell back only for Jay to catch her and lay her head on his lap. "I don't have much time. I can keep her at bay but only for so long. the others have too much faith in me." she let out an airy chuckle, "it would be endearing in any other circumstance.

She rolled her neck around as if trying to get a kink out. She
~~~

blinked rapidly and narrowed her eyes almost as if she was having a silent argument. "Sunshine, we need to know what's gonna happen up here." He gently runs his hand over her forehead.

"It's tattered, the land inside is from my part of my parents history and unlike Jazzy and the genie there's no one to tell you what lies beyond, I'm a prisoner I haven't seen it all in years." She lets out a strangled sob as the shadows around her claw at her arms trying to seep back inside. The best I can do is tell you to ask Uncle Varian what he knows about all of it."

"You knew-"

She chuckled, "Jay, my light, my love, Look at who I am. I'm not just the dark Queen. It may sound like this dark magic is all from the curse," She laughed a bit. "It's not, some of it is but a lot of it is just me. I use it to look through her eyes and redirect her attention away from you." She heaved out Jagged breaths. "You're not very subtle."

Jay let out a sigh. It made a lot more sense now of course Ella wasn't that easily fooled.

Ella let out a glass shattering scream as the shadows sunk its claws into her. Jay let a few brave tears leak down his cheeks, he felt useless he couldn't stop the pain she was in. He couldn't make her feel better. "Hey," she said weakly. "Don't cry, I deserve this. It's is all my fault."

"I severely doubt that," he assured her.

Her face, her expression, it fell into the depths of regret, "It is Jay. Andreana prays on young people who are in trouble." Jay's eyes widened, Ella could feel the waves of emotion coming off of him. "She knew I was in trouble; she knew I would ask for help."

"Who was she speaking through? How did she come to you?" He questions.

Ella started off into space like she was lost for a moment, "an extremely smart and tactical young woman. One who doesn't let her

guard down and doesn't share her secrets, one who lies a lot. She's a devil in disguise. A truly awful person. I don't know who she was but I know it wasn't Andreana's original face and that young girl was tricked." She grunted in pain as the shadows circled her arms, "I wanted help so I asked her to help me protect Ryder, Aaron and Jazzy. Listen, my mind is dangerous, it's dark, it's a death trap. It's all my- Fault!" she screamed as the shadows re entered her body and her eyes flashed black.

She sat up coughing, "What happened," she asked hoarsely.

"You fell, you were going back to sit the desk and tripped over Chad's chair," He gave Audrey a betrayed look. "When you were showing us the-"

Her head whipped around and she glared at Audrey. Jay looked between the two in wonder.

She cleared her throat, "You tripped."

"I went to get Jay after." she nodded weakly and placed a black glowing hand over the injury on her head making it fade in seconds.

"I should probably go and," She trailed off and her eyes widened as she saw the ring under her desk. She pointed at it and the box flew into her hands and she shoved it into her pocket. "I'm gonna go wash the blood out of my hair and then lay down." Jay helped her up and to her room.

~~~

"So that's it we have to wing it!" Gil said in frustration. "We have to guess and assume where we're going."

Evie ran a hand over her eyes and groaned in exasperation, it doesn't help that neither of us are the kids of Rapunzel's villains and I know Ryder wasn't that close with either of his parents let alone Gothel." She slammed her head on the desk. Doug picked her head up to make sure her glasses weren't broken. It's way too expensive to see.
~~~

Ryder looked up furiously, "I don't like it but there's one person in this world that might know the stories in full that we have access to."

Carlos's eyes widened, "No way, not happening." he crossed his arms leading to jazzy to place a hand on his shoulder and Jane to interlock their fingers. "She'd never do it and no telling what she would do inside her head."

"She hates Ella, that's true, But she hates feeling second best to her more." Aaron said, "If we bring her in and show her that none of it was Ella she'll feel more compelled to help. She'll feel good knocking Ella down into a goody good persona and showing that she was always the badder daughter. She feel like she accomplished something in Gothel's eyes."

"So our plans hinge on a quite literally the most unhinged girl I've ever known." Mal asked like it was the dumbest thing in the world and it kind of was.

"S'e 'as no soul." Harry agreed. He had his own run in with the crazy girl who had tried to steal his fathers hook and CJ's coat. While she was wearing it, so it was mostly just her violently dragging CJ around the isle hoping she would fall out.

"Ginny lives to embarrass us, she'll help." Ryder assured.

There was a moment of silence. "She said she made the deal." Jay said quietly.

There was a pregnant pause, "What!" the other three of the royal four shouted. "Ella cursed us," Jazzy pulled on her hair.

"My own sister."

"But she promised to protect us." The room was exploding with questions and worry.

Lonnie and Uma saw that Jay was trying to speak so both shared a glance and stood on the tables. "Hey!" Everyone turned to them, "Go ahead Jay." Uma said, jumping down and helping Lonnie down.

"Thank you, She said she made a deal with and I quote 'an extremely smart and tactical young woman. One who doesn't let her guard down and doesn't share her secrets, one who lies a lot. She's a devil in disguise. A truly awful person.' she also said she knew they were tricked."

"It souls like she was describing herself." Ben Pointed out.

Harriet shook her head, "Ella, don't 'ate 'erself."

CJ nods, "S'e wouldn't talk about 'erself like t'at."

"So we still have no clue who Andreana got to make her deal," Doug huffed.

No one knew what to do, they were bigger in numbers but never felt more useless. "Hey what did Ella have shoot into her hand?" Jay asked Audrey and Chad.

Both looked at each other, "I Choose life!"

~~~

Ella sat in her room stirring a cup of tea waiting on her guest to make an appearance. not even a moment later she did, not even hurting Ella in the process.

She calmly projected out of Ella in a puff of smoke and took hold of the teacup that Ella offered her. She had the same hair as Ella just pitch black and her eyes were placed out as Ella's hair regained its full golden color and her eyes shimmered and sparkled like the sunstone "You gave away a lot today." She said without any malice in her voice.

Ella nodded, "All part of our plan."

"Your plan." The identical girl hissed, "This is your plan, I wouldn't have let it go this far,"

"I know." Ella said flatly, "But I already told you." she finished stirring and took a sip of her tea, "I'm playing the long game."
~~~

"I don't understand why, I gave you the tools to get this all don't ages ago."

She scoffed "Oh please, you and I both know it will all come together on my birthday, I'll be stronger than ever, Especially with the extra power I'll have them give me."

"What will you have them bring you?"

"The shape shifting cloak. So I can shift and easily get away from them without the help of the artifact. And the top of time. It's more of an age manipulation tool but once I can harness that energy inside me I should be able to learn how to turn back time just like you wanted."

Andreana nodded, "I see you still intend on upholding your end of the deal."

"A princess never promises more than she can do, You'll get what's coming to you just like I said," she smirked behind her cup.

"Why don't you ask for the Wand of Oblivium? It could be of great use.

"That magic is dangerous mixed with my own magical signature I could accidently erase your mind or even my own, we'll use it separately to erase Vita Ariana and Lowell's memory of the events We'll change everything."

She nodded happily, "Very good now for a less pressing matter. Really a proposal so soon kid, your only turning 18."

"Oh please," She waved off the sorceress with a laugh. "You know you would have married Lowell a lot sooner if you could have foreseen what would befall him."

She looked down with a heartbroken expression, "But that won't happen to you I promised you that, do you really think so foully of me? That i would take some one's love after my own was taken?"

Ella shook her head, "No I trust you, it's just," She sighed, "I need confirmation that he'll stay with me when this all comes to light,

What I'm doing. This is purely my own insecurities taking hold."

Andreana placed their cups on the table and took Ellas hands in hers. "Ella you aren't doing anything bad. Not anymore. You're helping me right a tremendous wrong, you're helping put the pencil back in my hand, helping me rewrite not only my own history but Vita's own devilish actions too so our friends and family can all be whole again. So, I can get my sister back, Maybe even him." She said placing and hand on her bracelet that held a painting of the young man inside. "If he can stay with you while you overthrow a kingdom, he can stay with you while you if history for the better.

"Thanks Reana," she used her own nickname for the demon with a soft smile. "That makes me feel a lot better, "Sorry I know you wanted a lighter conversation."

The sorceress waved off the last part but clapped giddily, "Oh It will feel so good to get back at mean ol' Vita, using her own wand against her too, oh she has it coming." Andreana brushed some of Ella's hair out of her face and cupped her cheek, "I'm so glad you turned out better than her, I knew I made the right choice," She almost sounded motherly. Andreana really started to treat Ella like the daughter she never got to have in the last year and a half. They found they could work better together that way as opposed to them screaming at each other 24/7. It worked out as Andreana always wanted a child, someone she could do right by (at east her definition of right) and Ella was in desperate need of a better mother figure then Gothel.

"Don't judge someone based on their family line." Both clinked their cups together in cheers. Ella was very proud of herself; she had accomplished so much in her short life and soon it would all come together. She was out to fulfill her own agenda some might have been for others but overall, it was hers. Was it for good or bad? Would it bring light or dark? Was she worse than the demon across from her? Was Andreana right to trust her? Were her friends right to trust her? Is Jay right to trust her? And who would survive to see history rewritten by this menace with angel eyes, by this devil in disguise? She truly was and awful person.

Things are heating up even more and it's driving me crazy to

only give this to you one piece at a time. I have an oral report due Wednesday and I haven't even started because I wanted to get this out today. I even spent all day looking at magical artifacts from tangled so I could figure out what I wanted Ella to ask for and reasons why she could want them and remembering and researching locations from the series for her mind. We're getting really close to the end of section two.

How do you feel about me revisiting old songs later on and giving them new meaning in the context of the story?
Do you think Andreana really care about Ella or is it all a ploy?
What side do you think Ella is really on?
Is Vita really a bad guy or is Andreanna manipulating Ella?
Does Andreanna really care about her sister or is it all a ruse?

And As Always
Did you like the picture?
Any predictions?
Anything in particular you're excited for?

~DarkVixen

Character Descent: Andreana

[image] [image]

This is only based on what we know so far and small things that can be attributed to any child or person. Like the pony thing every imaginative little girl at some point has wished for a pony. basic stuff.

~~~

Andreana was a good girl, she played with her sister
Andreana was a good girl, she listened to her mother and father
Andreana was a good girl, she did what she was told no questions asked
Andreana was a good girl; she used her gifts to keep Ariana and vita safe
Andreana was a good girl, she knew compassion
Andreana was a good girl, she loved animals
Andreana was a good girl, she helped injured animals
Andreana was a good girl, she stood up for what's right
Andreana was a good girl, she contributed to the building of her land
Andreana was a good girl, her soft voice could be confused for a princess
Andreana was a good girl, she made a castle
Andreana was a worried woman; the village didn't know how to get by without her
Andreana was a worried woman, Vita didn't listen to her father
Andreana was a worried woman, Humans were killing nature
Andreana was a worried woman, the country she served treated her like a work mule
Andreana was a worried woman; she can't remember her last day off
Andreana was a worried woman, Foley was getting out of hand
Andreana was a worried woman, didn't trust Vita anymore
Andreana was a worried woman, there was an increase of crime in her country
~~~

Andreana was a sad woman her father had been killed
Andreana was a sad woman, her country was divided
Andreana was a sad woman; her sister was barley speaking to her
Andreana was a sad woman; she had found out what her sister had done
Andreana was a sad woman; she knew Ariana wasn't being fully truthful
Andreana was a sad woman; she was insecure worried she wasn't enough
Andreana was a sad woman; her best friend was planning something dangerous
Andreana was a sad woman; she gave her the tool without knowing
Andreana was a sad woman, as she cradled her dead sister in her arms, dead by her hands
Andreana was a sad woman, all she wanted was a family and a husband
Andreana was a sad woman, she lost everything at 17
Andreana was a bad woman, she enslaved people in their minds
Andreana was a bad woman; she burned her sisters body leaving no evidence
Andreana was a bad woman, she sent her nation into a panic
Andreana was a bad woman, she killed almost all of her friends
Andreana was a bad woman, she embraced dark magic
Andreana was a bad woman, she held on to her role as the villain
Andreana was a bad woman, when offered sympathy she said she'd rather burn

Andreana's story is tragedy
Andreana killed people
Andreana is a victim of fear and circumstance
Andreana was pushed to the edge
Andreana is and always has been scared

[image]

[image]

Chapter Fifty-five

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: *"Don't judge someone based on their family line." both clinked their cups together in cheers. Ella was very proud of herself, she had not only tricked and spelled all of her friends and family she had also gotten the drop on this demon. She was out to fulfill her own agenda, was it for good or bad? Would it bring light or dark? Was she worse than the demon across from her? And who would survive to see history rewritten by this menace with angel eyes, by this devil in disguise.*

~~~Now~~~

Varian Laid on his stomach in his workshop playing with Vera, how he missed Ruddiger. There was a knock on the door, so he picked her up and made his way up the steps as the knocks persisted "I'm Coming, I'm coming. Jeez let me get up the stairs."

He opened the door and saw Jay who looked to be having a panic attack. With Uma trying to calm him down. "Hey kids what's wrong?"

"Hi, Varian, can we uh" she gestured down stairs, "talk."

He nodded and the three made the journey down stairs Jay was hyperventilating the whole time. "What's going on?" He asked playing Vera on the floor and pulling out the two stools at his work desk for Uma and Jay to sit while he leaned on the wall.

"We got through to Ella. But she couldn't give us much. She told us to come to you and ask about the places Rapunzel and Eugene had been."

Varian winced, "I wasn't at all of them and i was in prison for a lot of it."

Uma tilted her head, "Prison?"
~~~

He scratched the back of his neck. "I may have sorta maybe helped overthrow Corona at one point."

The young woman's eyes widened, "and they didn't..." she trailed off. He clenched her fist "Oh the next time I see Belle and Beast I'm gonna," She went off in a rant. It was in a language neither boy could understand. She calmed herself down and nodded at Varian, "Please tell us what why might encounter."

~~~

Ella sat on the floor of her room, well not exactly her room, it was her room in her mind palace. A beautiful room of amethyst walls and golden furniture with the softest sheets and bedding the mind could think of and a wonderfully plush rug. If the blond had known how her younger siblings had been treated while she was living in here for the last 12 years, she would have lost her mind. She was not chained, she was not encased in glass, she was not forced into a take of water never to feel her legs again. She was living like a princess. She thought they all were treated like the royalty they are. She was sitting crisscrossed with Andreana right across from her both leaned over a map of Ella's mind. "We should make them work for it to see how loyal they are to me." Ella ran a hand through her golden locks, "right?"

Andreana nods her black locks bouncing with her. "We need to know you can trust them, I say we hold you here," she pointed to a place on the map that looked like Cassandra's string hold. "We'll reshape it and move it so that its at the back of your mind. The question is what obstacles do you want them to see."

She put a hand on her chin, "Definitely my memory storage." she waved her hand and it moved towards the front of the map.

"We should let them go through your imagination vault too." Andreana swiped a finger over said image and moved it behind her memory storage.

"Last is my dreamscape."

Andreana grabs her wrist "What about your family gallery they
~~~

need to think you still care."

Ella grins, "do you really think me so careless, Reana." she waved at the map and it got bigger, "It's the first location they have to pass though. It's dressed up like my throne room."

The sorceress grinned, "Is this what it feels like to be proud," She asked, clutching her shirt. "I quite enjoy the feeling, If my tears were acidic I might have cried."

The blond cackles at the joke her mentor made, "Like i said my dreamscape is right before my thought scape and will be the most difficult part to get though."

"I know what will make it more difficult," The queen tilted her head. Andreanna made the map smaller again and ripped it.

Ella keeled over and screamed. The older of the two looked out the window and saw the scenery tear apart. She did it again, and again and again. The map was in five parts and Ella was screaming bloody murder. She looked up, her teeth bared, eyes glowing gold and gold tears streaming down her cheeks. "What the Hell!"

"Look Now they have to jump across caves to get to you."

"I thought you wanted them to find me not die trying."

Andreana placed a cold corpse-like hand on Ella's cheek, "Don't you wanna see if they really love you."

"Well yeah but-"

Andreana whipped away her tears, "Darling I'm doing this for you, so you can have everything you want, so you can protect everyone and give everyone the life they deserve. We're similar, you know."

She nodded, "I do." She said horsey. "We both just want to have control of our own fate, you just want to gain what you destroyed. I just want to fix what I've messed up."

"Right and we both want to protect our loved ones from ourselves." She finished. "We are dangerous women Ella, with power comes

problems and we need to know how to solve them." Ella looks down and moves to the window. Andreana thought she had messed up, It would make sense she did just make almost unrepairable tears in the teenagers mind. "What's wrong?" she asked, stepping forward carefully, "Are you mad at me again. I can fix the tears, there will be scares but i can-"

The rambling was cut short as the girl whipped tears from her eyes. They were still in her mind, so they were pure magic, "What if-" she breathes out shakily, "What if Jay leaves after this. I don't know if i can force him back if i know he wouldn't jump the same hurtles I am for him, for me"

"There's a quote from one of those moves you watched when you got here, 'With love comes loss. It's part of the deal." I think that applies pretty nicely here."

Ella sniffled, "There's more to that quote Reana. 'Sometimes it hurts, but in the end, it's all worth it. There's no greater gift than love,'" She finished. Her eyes get misty. "Maybe Jay would jump through all these hoops." She turned to Andreana with a hopeful look.

"If there truly is no greater gift, I think he would. It's what I'm doing for Lowell so I can right Vita's wrong. You might lose him for a time and it might hurt, But I think in the end he'll come back to you. Like I said Jay loves you more than Lowell ever loved me." Andreana gently wraps her arms around the girl. Ella burries her head into Andreana's shoulder. The sorceress sighs "You know I can bring you back with me. You and Jay, I can give you everything." She pushed the young girl back a bit so she could look into her emerald eyes. "You have blond hair like Me and Lowell's mothers, and green eyes like mine. I could make you pass for ours, you could grow up happy. I could pass Jay off for a kid. Fix found he did that a lot."

Ella leaned back and thought for a moment, "As amazing as that sounds I would rather live the life I was supposed to live here. You deserve you own kid Reana to live and grow and learn with them."

"I did that with you."

"From the start," she pulled back further. "A child you didn't possess at the start. You need a fresh start if you want a child, one born with a pure mind. I can't be that child not with," She looked out at the tears, "Those." and down out of her tower, "All of this." her mind was a cluttered mess Andreana deserved better.

"Ella," A far off echo whispered, "Nightlight comes on are you okay?"

A smile graced her lips at the sound of voice laced with worry, "I'll talk to you later, are you good in here alone."

Andreana nods and sinks into the bed with a book in hand and waves Ella off. "Who wouldn't be okay in here?" Ella rolled her eyes but hugged the sorceress one more time and blinked herself back to the world of the living.

"Oh good, you're okay." Jay sighed in relief.

"Why wouldn't I be." She asked Suspiciously.

He stammered, He was so beautiful when he stammered. She did this just cause she liked to see him all flustered. "You were in a deep meditative state and weren't coming out."

She grinned up at him, "always worrying." She stood and cup his cheek giving him a long kiss. "I'm fine i promise, Now" She purposely let her eyes glow gold to make him think she was pushing her way out or trying to at least. "Help me."

His eyes widened "W-what"

"I said let's go." she giggled, "You question me a lot lately maybe i should heal you ears." He nervously laughs, "Well lead the way my dashing Thief."

He regains his confidence and smirks, "Why of course my princess." As he crosses the room to open the door for her, Ella makes a split second decision and pulls the ring box from a draw in her vanity.

'What are you doing!?' Andreana yelled in her head.

'Speeding things up a bit.'

So, Ella's living conditions were revealed
She's having Doubts,
Andreana offered another option,
and Ella's losing patience.

And As Always
Did you like the picture?
Any predictions?

Anything in particular you're excited for?

~DarkVixen

Andreana's house

Sorry I haven't been Updating much a lot is going on and I have other stories, but I should get a chapter or two up this week. I'm gonna take a break in-between Part two and three of this story just to finish planning and regroup.

As an apology here is my first draft of the ruin's of Andreana's house. Yes, I wrote my name on my hand.

[image]

I promise there will be updates this week

~Vixen

Chapter Fifty-six

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: He regains his confidence and smirks, "Why of course my princess." As he crosses the room to open the door for her, Ella makes a split-second decision and pulls the ring box from a draw in her vanity.

'What are you doing!?' Andreana yelled in her head.

'Speeding things up a bit.'

~~~Now~~~

Jay led Ella to a clearing on sun drop peak, "Oh i love this place" Ella grinned, "Its teaming with magic." She sank to her knees and ran her hand over the grass allowing little lightning bugs to rise up and circle her before gracefully flying off. She giggled and laid back, Jay laid next to her and just stared at her. "What?"

He shook his head, "Just looking at my beautiful Queen," after this was all over they would be okay, they could live and love how they wanted to. Everything would be great. Just a week and a half left. By her birthday everything would be perfect. He sat up and pulled out the picnic basket he had brought, Everything doused to the brim with sleeping spells, Dark sleeping spells. Ella wouldn't notice any more dark magic entering her body; she was already dangerously corrupted, but purity magic, she would notice that, It had to be dark.

And the amount had to do with how powerful she was, it would take two dozen cookies dripping in nightmare nettles (a potion that could be made into sprinkles and cause and amplified nightmares) to get her down.

"What a wonderful surprise." It took more than Jay thought but thank the good gods she started nodding off. "I have," She yawned, "something to ask you." she reached for the pocket in her dress.
~~~

Jay took her arm, "You're practically out of it, let's go home you can ask me in the morning."

She shook her head, "No I need to," she trailed off as she passed out leaning on her boyfriend ring box tumbling from her grasp.

The former thief noticed the box and picked it up. "T'ats an engagement ring." CJ said as her and Aaron swang out of a tree the rest of the Hooks doing the same. Jays eyes were blown up like Balloons.

~~~

"Owe Jazzy," Gil groaned.

"Stop staring at me and concentrate."

"But you're so beautiful," she kicked him in the back again.

She sighed Carlos was next to her on top of the desk and sat crisscrossed with his wolves on either side of them. She pinched the bridge of her nose, "Look I know i'm stunning." she announced dramatically, "But now is not the time you're going into Ella's head. She's dangerous, insane and I'm pretty sure her mind is boobby trapped. You're gonna need magic. So meditate so you can use it," She snapped, reaching down to slap the top of his head.

Carlos passed her a soda, he held out a bottle open her but her hand glowed a swirl of purple and blue as she pulled off the top and tossed it across the room. "How does meditating help?" Evie asked.

"It strengthens your core." Carlos said eating a taffy rope.

Evie looks at him in disgust "strengthen your core." she mumbled

The white haired boy king tilted his head, "I already did."

"That's not what I meant." she said, poking his stomach.

"Let go of me ya monster!" Ginny screamed as Ceila and Freddy pushed her in.
~~~

Jazzy and Carlos smirked, "Hello Ginny."

The red clad villain spun around and two, "You!" She growled, "You made them bring me here."

Jazzy took a sip of her soda, "Duh, their my sisters." She cracked her back and got straight to the point. "How would you like to get some dirt on Ella?"

She raised an eyebrow, "I'm listening."

"We need to help fix her head, and you know a lot of the stories even after your mother was killed the first time, seeing as Gothel complained about Rapunzel a lot," Ginny nodded, exasperation clear on her face.

"Everyone's mind is broken into segments, parts of their life," Carlos continued. "Like her thoughscape might be in the shape of Rapunzel's tower. We want you to go into Ella's head and lead Gil and Evie though her head. "You get your dirt we get information on how to bring good Ella back and get her out of your life everyone wins and you win twice."

Ginny placed a hand to her chin, thinking the idea over. "I do like winning." she looked down at the cross legged, meditating forms of Evie and Gil, "do I have to do that?"

Carlos shook his head, "No you have no magic."

She smirked, "Alright I'll do it."

"Great" Jazzy clapped

"Jays back." Mal said, sticking her head in, "Get ready, she's fast asleep."

"And not a moment too soon" she said.

Jay laid Ella down on her bed brushing her hair aside, he looked down at the ring case in his hand. "What are you doing night light?" He saw the door open and a small flash blink next to Ella's head.

"They told us to give them four hours." Uma told him, "They're gonna be in there a while."

Ginny, Gil, and Evie landed at the entrance of Ella's mind, "Okay this isn't right," Ginny said confused and slightly disturbed. It was a lush field with beautiful ponds and weeping willows, and a small girl who looked like a little Ella swinging on a swing giggling. "There's no way this is Ella's mind."

Gil noticed something, "One, two, three, giggle. One, two, three, giggle." Evie raised an eyebrow, "It's a pattern, every three swing up she giggles. Mind monsters or beings usually greet the person entering, whether it's in the form of trying to kill us or help us, If they see us and she's looking right at us. It's an Illusion." He reached out and swiped his hand across the image.

The feel of green grass darkened black the pond emptied, the trees were dead and tilted and the swing squeaked as it swung with no one on it. The sky was torn and there was a tall tower made of black rock in the distance "That's more of what I expected," Evie said.

"Help!" A blood curdling scream boomed across the sernary. "Help Me!" Ginny jumped

Gil and Evie looked at each other and started forward. "Are neither of you scared of that."

"After Jazzy not much can scare us."

~~~

The scenery, shifted around them and turned into the Coronen throne room. There were many pictures and paintings of her family, Rapunzel, Eugene, Ryder and Ella. Ella stuck out like a sore thumb as her mother's hair had turned brown after she lost her connection to the sun stone. It was clear from the start that Ella was powerful and special. Ginny sneered even in her own family she had to stick out.

The deeper they got into the throne room the more disturbing
~~~

things got. The first pictures had all of them smiling or dancing but the next few were just of Ryder and Ella, both dirty and covered in scrapes and bruises. Then there were a few of her Gothle and Hans. there was even one or Two go Ginny making the red clad VK confused. She was nothing but horrible to Ella and Ryder their whole lives together.

The ones that bothered them the most were the ones of her and Hans. She was standing in front of Ryder as Hans grabbed her by the hair, her toes were barely grazing the ground. One of him with his arm up and Ella on the floor holding her cheek. It went on like this for a while. Ginny and Hands didn't really know one another; he only came around to take care of Ella and Ryder. She had always been jealous that they got a father figure and she didn't. But as they passed a picture of Ella shielding Ginny, whose back was to her, from an angry Hans she thought maybe it was good that she didn't know him. That entire part of the hall looked like a war zone. Picture frames were smashed, paint scribbling out the more gruesome parts of the story, some pictures even looked like an axe was taken to them.

After an uncomfortably long time it just became the eight. There were no other pictures, just that of the eight. "How didn't we notice?" Evie frowned. "She always seemed so strong."

"Ella didn't want any of us to notice," Gil said matter-of-factly. "She has a way with words, she never wanted us to know." He leaped forward grabbing Ginny by the back of her jacket to keep her from falling through the rip in Ellas mind. "If we fall through that Ella absorbs our power and we die out there." Evie turned to Gil with a look of shock and fear, Ginny gripped her chest in fear "Jazzy didn't let me leave without preparing me for every possibility. And giving me this for you to use."

He handed her a needle and a spool of rainbow thread, "mind thread, it's nearly impossible to make," she gasped. "Jazzy really is amazing." she smiled.

Gil smiled to himself, "She really is."

Evie bent down and touched the thread to the side of the rip. The

entire scenery shuddered making Gil fall backwards, "That's just her reacting, these rips have to hurt. It's almost like touching sunburn." he threaded the needle that was given to her and muttered, "Green, Green what is green that makes sense." she tapped her chin then exclaimed, "Hope!"

Gil covered her mouth as to not attract anything but it was too late. A giant black and red fox came barreling towards them. Its face was covered by a skull, its body looked like a swirl of flowing molten lava and a tail made of pure fire. Gil's eyes flared brown, his powers of the mind allowed him to see exactly what this monster was. "That's Ella's familiar."

"What!?" The fox started them down and made a move to knock them into the rip, "I didn't know they even existed anymore." They ducked as the fox jumped towards them. Since she was part of the mind she could stand on the rip no problem.

"They're not supposed to, The last people to have one were Andreana, Lowell, and Ariana." The fox lunges at them again reading to Evie PUlled Ginny behind her and extended the needle making it glow blue and cutting through its middle. "Lowell's power was like Carlos' to control and talk to animals, It made it easy for him to have Familiars. It's probably why those wolves follow around Carlos. And Jazzy's Tigger."

"She's imbuing him with the first Rish's old memories, Why did she name him after her first tiger again?"

Gil shrugged "that's something to ask evil her,"

"But I thought Familiars could only be real animals."

"I don't think it matters when you're skilled in dark magic and can make all the demons in your head real." He looked at the cut apart fox, "The point being if Ariana was in Jazzy and Lowell's magic is in Carlos,"

Evie's heart dropped to her stomach and felt her dinner rise to her throat, "Andreana's magic is in Ella or,"

"She's in here somewhere," Gil confirmed.

"Would that still mean we could use the mind mangle cure on her." Evie asked as she three the needle across the rip and whispered her Hopes to regain Ella as she pulled the landscape back together and world on sewing it up. Ginny was lost.

Gil tapped his chin, "I don't know, what if," he trailed off and Evie nudged him urging him to go on, "What if Ella's the one Andreana is helping. It would make sense I mean we already knew she was manipulated by her and you eight were always close. Who would put you guys in power and sit on the sideline waiting for you all to fall? It doesn't make sense, but if it was one of the Royal four then she could keep an eye on you and spread her reign like a wildfire. It would also make sense why this all seems so easy. I mean we were able to free Ryder, Aaron and Jazzy in less than two months, someone watching from the sides would notice and Intervene, but if It's Ella,"

"Then she wouldn't notice, she can't be with us 24/7, that would be suspicious." Evie said with fear rising in her. She ran a hand through her hair, "No that's impossible. Ella would never, she had to have been placed under the Mind mangle to strike the deal with Andreana in the first place. She was a kid, she was only five."

"Exactly she was only five and she was scared, if Andreana presented herself as someone that would help," Neither noticed the haves of the fox regrowing itself making two of the same Fox.

Ginny However did, "Uh Guys?"

Evie shook her head and held up a finger to Ginny, "The only way we'll settle this is by taking a detour." Gil gave her a questioning look. She pointed towards the stronghold, "That's Ella's thoughscap she's trapped in the cage on the edge like Varain was."

"Help me!" Ginny flinched again

"Once a mind matures properly In the thoughtscape there's a door that leads to a individuals core, it looks like a waterfall. We'll check her core if it's still gold then she's still good inside if it's black we

might have a problem."

"Guys."

Gil didn't understand considering all of their magic had been corrupted Evie sensed his dilemma and explained, "Mal said magic will only corrupt once it leaves the core, it's why once they were free they were able to have some of their magic back."

Andreana glared from her place behind the newly fixed tear, "bodies of fire get up and erupt." She whispered to the still forming foxes.

"Guys!" Like clock work they sprang to their feet and charged at Ginny, Gil, and Evie again."

Evie was the first to notice and shouted, "Run!"

Now that they were busy Andreana appeared in the stronghold and tapped her foot on the bar holding Ella bringing her over. "What's going on they're still here."

"We need to take the black magic from your core."

"What!?"

"I would put an illusion over it but in its pure essence I can't." Ella huffed as the tow made their way to her core bank. "Just place your hands under and it will sink into you. I can't do it yet. I'm still just an after image."

Ella grumbled and placed her hands under the black and gold waterfall. The black magic sunk into her skin running along her veins all the way up to her eyes.

Ella jumped back seeing her veins black out, "Now I can place an illusion over it."

Andreana tapped her arms and face covering it up just enough, "Mom it hurts."

The sorceress's eyes widened, "what did you say?"

"I said man it hurts." Ella looked at her weirdly.

Andreana cleared her throat, "Yeah I suppose pure magic will do that to you." She helped Ella back into her cage and went to her room in the thoughtscape, "Soon everything will be how it should be." She pulled a picture of her and Lowell from the desk, "for us and her."

So we're in Ella's mind,
It's a mess
Andreana is watching Evie, Ginny, and Gil
and having some confusing thoughts
And we met Ella's familiar

Yes what the familiar is, is 100% intentional

And As Always
Did you like the picture?
Any predictions?

Anything in particular you're excited for?

~DarkVixen

Chapter Fifty-seven

[image]

Last time on DarkHearts: Andreana cleared her throat, "Yeah I suppose pure magic will do that to you." She helped Ella back into her cage and went to her room in the thought scape, "Soon everything will be how it should be." She pulled a picture of her and Lowell from the desk, "for us and her."

~~~Now~~~

Ginny had never liked Ella; her mother had paid so much attention to her and none to her real daughter. Though that seemed to be a cycle if her older sister Cassandra was anything to go by. She kidnapped Rapunzel and left her real daughter to rot the first time. The second time she took in Rapunzel's daughter to train her to destroy the sun wielder and left her real daughter to fend for herself. Ryder wasn't really a problem yea he was a brat, but he never got in her way, he never showed her up It was always Ella.

Back before Ryder's hair had changed to blue, before he met Uma, when it was still white, He was too good for her mother. If it wasn't for Ella who made a terrifying demonstration of what she could do on the isle, Ryder might have been left on the street. Ella made Ryder useful, It seemed she did everything for him, anything to keep him with her and near her, to keep him safe.

All that being said, Ginny was astonished upon seeing herself in the throne room. The others didn't see, but underneath the pictures of the two of them, Which consisted of screaming matches, There was a child's drawing in crayon of a blond figure holding the hand of a black haired figure. Above it was scribbled in perfect royal looking text 𝔖𝔦𝔰𝔱𝔢𝔯𝔰.

She got this horrible feeling in her gut...was that guilt?

She had no time to think about it; she was running for her life,
~~~

away from Ella's familiar. They came to a stop in front of a small cottage, Gil Opened the door and Evie pulled her in. GIl put a seal over the door, "Let's hope that holds until we get through here."

"Yeah and where is here!?" Ginny screamed in a panic.

"That's why we brought you!" Evie snapped.

Ginny glared at her, a feeble glare at best considering the blue haired girl had been under Ella's for so long. Ginny knew that, in fact she respected the fear Ella put people under with just a glare upon them. "I'm sorry I was a bit busy running for my life!"

Before Evie or even Gil could fire back there was a laugh, A child like laugh. "Ahh Daddy stop!" The voice giggled, The room shifted into a bedroom, a princess's bedroom. A much younger Eugene Fitzherbert was seen. Not excessively younger in body but you could tell. His eyes were brighter, his body was less tense, there were less frown lines and no dark circles under his eyes.

He was standing over her daughter tickling her, "Ah but that's no fun." He huffed before she kicked him in the stomach and he dramatically fell down next to her.

She sat up and crawled over to him climbing on his chest, "it's bedtime," and after image of Rapunzel walked through them, freaking out Ginny. Rapunzel picked Ella up off her fathers chest only to be pulled into her husband's lap and kissed on the temple.

"Ahh come on five more minutes."

She huffed but smiled fondly, "You said that a half hour ago it's bedtime." She kissed her daughter's forehead before pulling Eugene out of the room.

The image shifted again to a guard bearing the Auradonion crest violently ripping the small girl from her bed. Ella was confused and tried to weakly pull herself away from the guard. "Mama! Daddy!" Ella screamed upon seeing her parents, she was half asleep so it was no wonder she couldn't remember the magical binds on them. Seemed magic was only outlawed to everyone but Belle and Adam.

Ella's golden hair tousled, tears streamed down her cheeks as she banged on the soldier's helmet with her small fist trying to get them to let her go. Ryder looked confused, he must have been, he was snatched out of his crib by a strange man and more of them were here holding his mom and dad. He let out an ear splitting cry and pulled at the guards face. "Daddy help us!" Eugene kept pulling, trying to free himself as they dragged his kids away, once again his whole world was snatched away from him.

Evie Placed a hand over her mouth, Gil Looked mortified even Ginny was disturbed.

The room shifted again and they saw Ella glare As she held her brothers and sister close to her chest under the broken awning. They saw a figure walk up to her but couldn't see her face. They couldn't hear the words being spoken, like Ella had forgotten them herself. She held out her hand and the figure shook it making Ella's hair turn black. "Gil who is that?" Evie asked hurriedly.

He shook his head, "I don't know." He looked at Ginny who was in a state of frozen fear, "Ginny-"

She started breathing heavily, "She could have killed me," She whispered. Her anxiety spiked, "She- she could have always killed me." She was shaking and hyperventilating.

The small Ella scrunched up her nose and placed a thumb on Ryder's forehead, watching as a streak in his hair grew white, she sneered. She touched Jazzy's forehead and watched a baby blue streak form, she did the same to Aaron and watched a small patch of hair turn pink. "Right now they're all useless" Ella grumbled, "I'm gonna have to fix that." It sounded odd coming from the seemingly docile child.

The little girl looked up at them, almost looking through Evie to Ginny. She stood up leaving an imprint of the Ella with black streaks but This one looked like the little girl they had seen. She walked straight to Ginny and held her hand. She breathed in, counting to four and then did the same breathing out. She was coaching Ginny. "Is that....?" Evie trailed off not completely sure what she easy seeing.

"That's Ella's inner self like the voice in her head. It's a voice of innocence." Gil decided.

~~~~

Jay was dead asleep on the floor next to Ella's bed his head leaning next to her hand. The girl opened her eyes and rubbed her face, "Ugh My head hurts. I feel like I was hit by a truck." She groaned.

Her King was startled awake by her voice, "Ella?" This was unprecedented. Gil, Evie and Ginny were still in there.

"Yeah why do you look so scared?" she asked, still holding her head.

He let out a soft chuckle, "Not scared just tired, it's the middle of the night I was so tired I fell asleep here after getting you to bed."

Her eyes were half lidded, "You didn't have to do that, you could have laid up here." She pulled him on the bed and leaned on to his chest quickly falling back to sleep. It was only after a good half hour that Jay allowed himself to drift off.

Ella opened her eyes again once she was sure Jay was asleep. She shifted His arm off her and sat up. She looked down at her king fondly, "I love you so much" she whispered, moving his hair from his face. He looked at the ring on her nightstand. She sighed and swung her feet off her bed. Her slippers were on the side Jay was laying so she padded across the cold marble floor barefoot but she barely noticed. Her magic was bouncing around heating up so badly underneath her skin considering Evie and Gil were still in her head, it was a welcome sensation.

She grabbed the ring box and sighed. She pulled her satin robe off the back of her door and walked out the door. Her veins were blacking out making her look like a true queen of darkness. She made her way to the family room and snapped a fire sprung to life. The rind made its way, box and all into the fire. Ella fell to the floor watching as her magic flames melted the ring that held so much meaning.

"Why did you do that?" Andreana asked, making an appearance beside Ella. "I thought you wanted confirmation."
~~~~

She shook her head, "I did, I do but now that i think about it, I just want him to sleep peacefully. Let him have his little dream world until this is all done. I don't want him in the same kind of pain." she looked down at her hands, her fully black hands. She let out a heart wrenching sob.

"Ella-"

"I'm in so much pain," she cried harshly.

Andreana looked on in horror, 'Not again i didn't do this again.' she didn't want to believe it, was she just destined to hurt everyone she touched. Was the monster inside her that bad? The existence of her inner child killed everyone she loved and still was, The thing that believed she could do anything in the world without consequence. She looked to Ella and saw her tears slip off her face and on to her slowly darkening arms, steam rose up as soon as they hit, marking their evaporation.

"I don't want him to be like this," She sighed and looked at the ceiling, "I don't want any of them to be like this." She stood up and made her way down to the castle vaults. Andreana was following the whole time her mind a swirl of doubt and regret.

Ella found what she was looking for, the top of time and the shape shifting cloak. She placed them in a fairly open area before leaving and making her way to her study where the dream dust sat. "I need to keep him locked up to keep him safe."

Andreana grabbed her hand, "If you do that now everyone is gonna lose it, just wait till you get the extra magic."

~~~

"What are you?" Ginny asked as she regained her breathing.

The little girl giggled, "I'm Ellas inner self I'm her true self."

"One of innocence." Gil said again in relief.

The little girl giggled again but this time it was sinister and deceiving, "No, I'm one without consequence who believes they can
~~~

do anything." This was more worrisome.

"I thought the one in the mindscape was her inner self," Evie said.

He shook her head, "She's who Ella really is, they're locked up in their own heads that images won't be here once we free her. This is inner Ella; she's a being of her emotions and beliefs."

She nodded her head, "Now come on you're headed to the Mind scape right?" they didn't get to answer, "Of course you are, come this way. Let's get you out of here. Next is the house of yesterday tomorrow. It's her imagination palace. You're gonna need these." She passes them Sunglasses.

"Why?" Evie asked.

"There's a monster in there that if it sees your pupils will burn them out of your eyes."

Ginny's eyes widened, "That's possible in here!?"

She shrugged, "No clue it's her imagination anything is possible." she grabbed Ginny's hand and pulled her along.

They put on the sunglasses, and followed little Ella, "If this is her inner self she should have seen if anything foreign entered." Gil suggested.

"Hey-"

"No I didn't see it enter, I never saw Ella locked up, I was in the euphoria fields," She said pointing in the direction of a tear, "Well it was there, The mind just broke one day I have no idea why."

Evie pulled out her mind thread and rushed over to the rip and touched it to the side, There was a violent shudder and the thread turned Yellow. "Happiness." She threaded the needle and threw it across the rip and whispered what she knew what made Ella happy that wasn't dark or dangerous, It wasn't much.

"The fields!" The little girl squealed. She ran into the flowers and tapped one gold pollen flew out and fell onto her nose making her

giggle like a maniac.

"Now we know why she didn't see anything," Ginny said, crossing her arms.

"Come little sister," Ella laughed and tugged her into the fields.

Ginny stiffened, "Sister?" Ella nodded.

"She wanted someone there to care about her and Ryder. Aaron got The Hooks and Jazzy got the Facilier's but they got no one, they had no family there. Plus, you know the repeating."

Evie leaned forward, "Repeating?"

She looked around at them, "Did you guys not figure it out yet?" she looked around at their conceded faces. She sighed, "History is repeating itself. centuries ago, This magic that they're all using originated in specific people and bodies."

"The original eleven." she nodded.

"This magic is so strong and potent that it can't be passed on unless the body and mind is strong enough to take it so it lingers until such a time happens. Andreana was a girl with no family; she only had her sister so she made a family. Ella is repeating Andreana's life and work but instead of Andreana and Vita being separate she's acting like both of them. She has the worst parts of both." She fretted.

"What does that have to do with Ginny?"

Her face hardened, "Vita had a powerless little sister who died young, Ella thinks Ginny is her reincarnation since she's now a shadow."

"Ella's trying to rebuild Andreana's family," Gil realized.

"A better live version, But I don't know why."

~~~
~~~

A giggle echoes through the throne room, "Mom, Mom" a seven year old Ella calls out.

Andreana turns around, She smiles, "What's going on Sweetheart?" she asked picking up her daughter.

"Ryder got his powers, and Lonnie taught Ginny how to use a longsword and Aaron a cutlass."

"That's wonderful," Lowell said coming out of the side door.

Andreana winced, "I don't know, That seems pretty dangerous for Ginny."

Lowell wrapped his arms around his wife's waist, "Ginny's a tough little girl she's got this."

"Ahhh mommy." Ryder screams. Both Lowell and Andreana turn to the source of the scream and see a four year old Ryder run past the doorway arms raised and a five year old Ginny chasing him with a sword in her hand.

Lowell lets go of his wife and daughter and chases Ginny, "Your brother is not a practice dummy!"

Andreana smiles with her eyes closed, 'almost there, we are almost there.'

And I return from a long and must I say deserved break from this story. I'll get back to regular updates soon.
So, we met and inner Ella and know a little of what Andreana is planning.

And As Always
Did you like the picture?
Any predictions?

Anything in particular you're excited for?

~DarkVixen

I'll be back soon

Sorry I've been so MIA on this story I've been working on others, and I had a huge strike of writer's block. I promise I haven't abandoned it I'm on my way back. Until there here are a few shots I did on Andreana. What I feel like she would dress as in a more modern sense but still keeping her style

[image]

[image]

[image]

[image]

[image]

[image]

Yes, all these pictures are me (hence the face blocked out) with my hair as tangled as possible in some old building me and my friend found and thought it matched the aesthetic. I looked like a maniac wearing hand wraps that I upcycled from a shirt, leggings, and leather platforms in 90-degree weather lugging around a Harley Quinn backpack that had a purple cloak inside, make-up on my arm and a bike chain in hand at like 6 am😅. I had the idea of a dress but the one I had wasn't long enough to go with her style. It was so unnecessary but so much fun and that's really why I do all if this.

~DarkVixen